BAHASA INDONESIA

Book Two

Introduction to Indonesian Language and Culture

Yohanni Johns

To my children
Gregory, Francis, Monica, Michael and David.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The first edition of this book involved the help of many friends and colleagues at the A.N.U. and along with them, succeeding cohorts of second year students. All have contributed to this second edition, and to all of them I am deeply grateful.

In the first edition, I expressed my thanks to Mrs. Patricia Woodcroft-Lee, Dr. J. Sneddon, Dr. Ian Proudfoot, Ms. Penny Richards, Dr. Helen Creese and Dr. David Hill, and Mrs. Margaret Tie, and my colleagues in the Southeast Asia Centre Mrs. Jan Lingard, Dr. Soewito Santoso, Dr. Supomo and Dr. Soebardi.

The preparation of this new edition has increased my range of indebtedness and at the same time presented a new problem: that of coming to terms with the technology of word-processing.

This would not have been possible without again drawing on the generous help of my colleague Dr. Proudfoot, who never found any problem too small for his attention, and who solved numerous crises when the software seemed to have taken on a wilful life of its own. Together with him, I should thank again Dr. Creese, who brought the eagle eye of a philologist to spot inconsistencies in formatting, and other errors that I had missed.

Then I should thank two individuals, Mrs. Jean Harlen and Ms. Barbara Meyer who put a great deal of time into the mundane work of producing a working copy on disk from a scan of the old text, inserting new material, correcting and re-organising the old, and remaining calm when the image on the screen dissolved into chaos or vanished altogether. At the same time, I should not forget the help I received from Mrs. Pattie Owen, Miss Betty Kat, Ms. Lydian Meredith and Mrs. Barbara Tkalcevic who always ready to make their technical skills available when needed.

In addition, I am indebted to my colleagues in the Faculty, among them Dr. Tony Diller and again Dr. Supomo, who always responded willingly to the questions and puzzlements I brought to them.

Errors and short-comings, of course, remain my responsibility alone.

INTRODUCTION

Second Edition

This book is intended to develop and extend the language skills acquired from the study of *Bahasa Indonesia Langkah Baru Book One*. It is designed to contribute to the study of Indonesian at intermediate, i.e. 2nd year university level.

There is, however, an important difference in approach between the two volumes. *Bahasa Indonesia Langkah Baru Book One* was designed to present the salient features of the grammatical system of Bahasa Indonesia. In keeping with this purpose, the vocabulary and structures introduced in each lesson were tightly controlled in relation to the grammatical points to be introduced, and the reading passages accompanying each lesson were designed to bring together the grammatical material presented. They situated the structures taught in a context in which they could be readily grasped and remembered. In this volume, on the other hand, the reading passages are *sources* for the grammatical material that is presented, not a convenient means of summarising what has already been taught. In addition, they are used to develop comprehension and to extend vocabulary.

The book consists of sixteen chapters, two of which (Chapters 8 and 15) are devoted to revision. The core of each chapter is a reading passage. These reading passages illustrate a variety of themes and styles. They include selections from the press, advertisements, essays, short stories and some poetry — all, with the exception of the poem 'Bunglon' (Chameleon), written between 1950—79. They represent the work of authors from various parts of Indonesia: from Java, Sumatra, Kalimantan, Sulawesi, Bali and Rote. Every passage is followed by a word list.

Each chapter also includes cultural notes (where appropriate), comprehension questions, a discussion and analysis of selected grammatical features occuring in the passage, together with exercises in language usage and oral and written expression.

The sections devoted to grammar give a careful analysis of important grammatical features occuring in the text. These are explained and illustrated by numerous examples, each example being accompanied by an English rendering to ensure the grammatical point is clearly understood.

The usage sections are devoted to the explanation of features of word formation based on words or expressions occurring in the passage, and common set phrases. The meanings are illustrated by numerous examples showing the important nuances which distinguish one form from another. I have tried to ensure that every example is natural and useable, and that it establishes a context in which the sense of the expression discussed is clear.

The exercises in written and oral expression with which most chapters conclude, are designed to test mastery of the material presented. These exercises give students an opportunity to check the degree to which they have

'internalised' the material they have been studying, and provide the teacher with a useful form of feedback.

An English version of each passage is placed at the end of the chapter. These English versions are intended as a guide to students who, while understanding the passage as a whole, may still need insight into its nuances of meaning or cultural character.

I should add that not all of the authors represented in the book are outstanding, but their style of writing is in every case individual enough to show the ways in which Indonesian is used by educated Indonesians from different backgrounds. Thus they extend the student's experience of the language.

As for content, I have chosen passages that are true to the place and time they represent. Some are simply documentary, others have literary value. But though I have made some reference to this literary value, the purpose of the book is not to teach literature. It is to contribute to developing in the student that level of skill in reading and understanding the language that makes it possible to read and to enjoy literary works.

A glossary is provided at the back of the book for the benefit of students without ready access to a dictionary. Like *Bahasa Indonesia Langkah Baru Book One*, this volume is accompanied by a set of tapes.

In the course of preparing this second edition, the book has been reset. I have been at pains to remove ambiguities of expression, errors and misprints, and to improve the lay-out of the material I am presenting. More fundamentally, I have attempted to give a sharper focus to the explanation of points of grammar, and make good omissions. This, in a number of cases has led to the inclusion of a wide range of additional material. However no changes have been made to those passages on tape.

This book has been written for students who want to take Indonesian seriously. It needs to be worked through with care. There can be no cutting of corners in language study. Sound understanding of a language derives from reading closely and reading with care. There is no more mystery in Indonesian than in any other language, but neither is it lacking in the refinements and subtleties common to all languages. This book is intended to introduce the student to these refinements and subtleties. Nevertheless the examples are not removed from real life. They are representative of the language as it is used in standard discourse, and in almost every case can be heard or used in conversation that goes beyond passing the time of day and exchanging news of family matters.

A book can only go so far in serving as an aid to language learning. Even when the contents of this book — any text book — are mastered, there remains a far longer road ahead than the distance one has traversed. In language learning life is the real teacher. After formal study is complete the aspiring student has a lot of living to do. My hope is that this book will provide a sound basis for effective living in Indonesian.

KEY TO THE CHAPTERS

CHAPTER 1

I.A.	Reading Passage: **Kata 'Anda' Genap 20 Tahun**	1
	Notes: **Anda**	2
I.B.	Wordlist	2
I.C.	Comprehension	3
I D.	Grammar: The use of question marker **-kah**	3
I.D.1	**-kah** attached to intransitive verbs and adjectives	4
I.D.2	**-kah** attached to question words	4
I.D.3	**-kah** attached to a classifier or measure word	5
I.D.3	Homework	5
I.D.4	**-kah** in subject focus and object focus constructions	5
I.D.4	Exercises	6
I.D.5	**-kah** attached to the words **pernah, sering, jarang**, etc.	7
I.E.1	The use of **ganti** and its derivatives	7
I.E.2	The use of **nyata** and its derivatives	8
I.E.1&2	Exercises	9
I.E.3	The use of **harga** and its derivatives	9
I.F.	Names of individuals who played an important role in the development of the Indonesian language	10
I.G.	Homework: Multiple choice	10
I.H.	Oral and Written Expression	11
I.I.	Proverb	11
I.A.	English Version: **The Word 'Anda' is 20 Years Old**	12

CHAPTER II

II.A.	Reading Passage: **Bunglon**	13
	Notes	14
II.B.	Wordlist	14
II.C.	Comprehension	14
II.D.	Language Usage	15
II.D.1	The use of **samar** and its derivatives	15
II.D.2	The use of **jelma** and its derivatives	16
II.D.1&2	Exercises	16
II.E.1	The use of **biar** and its synonyms	17
II.E.2	The use of the verb **biar and its** derivatives	17
II.E.1&2	Exercises	18
II.F.1	The use of the word **rupa** and its derivatives	18
II.F.2	The use of the verb **merupakan**	19
II.G.1.	The use of the verb **ubah** and its derivatives	20
II.G.2.	The use of the verb **tukar** and its derivatives	21
II.G.1&2	Exercises	21

II.H. Homework 22
II.I. Oral and Written Expression 22
II.A. English Version: **Chameleon** 23

CHAPTER III
III.A. Reading Passage: **Bahasa Kesusasteraan** 24
III.B. Wordlist 24
III.C. Comprehension 25
III.D. Grammar 25
III.D.1&2 The use of **ada** in various contexts to indicate emphasis 25
III.D.1&2 Exercises 26
III.E. The use of **adalah/ialah** 26
Note 27
III.E. Exercises 27
III.F. The use of **ada** and its derivatives 27
III.F. Exercises 28
III.G. The use of **pakai** and its derivatives 29
III.H. The use of **guna** and its derivatives 30
III.G.&H. Exercises 31
III.I. Translation Exercise: **Lalat-Lalat** 31
Notes 33
III.J. Vocabulary Expansion 33
III.A. English Version: **Literary Language** 33
III.I. English Version: **Flies** 34

CHAPTER IV
IV.A. Reading Passage: **Kering** 35
Cultural Note 36
IV.B. Wordlist 36
IV.C. Comprehension 37
IV.D.1, 2&3. Grammar:The use of **ber+ root+ an** verbs in various contexts 38
IV.D.1, 2&3 Exercises 40
IV.E. Language Usage 40
IV.E.1 The use of **retak** and its derivatives 40
IV.E.2 The use of **patah** and its derivatives 41
IV.E.3 The use of **putus** and its derivatives 41
IV.E.4 The use of **pecah** and its derivatives 42
IV.E.1, 2, 3&4 Exercises 43
IV.F. Oral and Written Expression 43
IV.G. Language Appreciation: **Kemarau** 43
IV.A. English Version: **Drought** (reading passage) 45
IV.G. English Version: **Drought** (song lyric) 46

CHAPTER V
V.A. Reading Passage: **Dua Dunia** 47
V.B. Wordlist 48
V.C. Comprehension 49
V.D. Grammar: The use of **me + root** verbs meaning to become

like or take on the characteristic expressed by the root 50
V.D.l, 2, 3&4 Exercises 51
V.E. Language Usage 53
V.E.1 The use of the word **semua** 53
V.E.2 The use of the word **segala** 53
V.E.3 The use of the word **seluruh** 54
V.E.4 The use of **semuanya, segalanya,** and **seluruhnya** 54
V.E.l, 2, 3&4 Exercises 55
V.F. The use of **sanggup** and its derivatives 55
V.G. The use of **segar** and its derivatives 56
V.H. The use of **sigap** and its derivatives 56
V.I. Exercises 57
V.J. Homework 57
V.K. Vocabulary Expansion 57
V.L. Oral and Written Expression 58
V.A. English Version: **Two Worlds** 58

CHAPTER VI

VI.A. Translation Practice: **Apakah penglihatan anak Anda benar-benar baik?** (Advertisement) 60
VI.B. Model Translation 61
VI.C. Grammar: The use of **malas + verb** 61
VI.D.1 The use of **agar, supaya,** and **agar supaya** 61
VI.D.2 The use of **supaya/agar** with desiderative verbs 62
VI.E. Language Usage 63
VI.E.1 The use of **mungkin** and its derivatives 63
VI.E.2 The use of **jamin** and its derivatives 63
VI.E.3 The use of **periksa** and its derivatives 64
VI.E.1, 2&3 Exercises 65
VI.F. Fluency Exercise: **Obat Tetes Insto** (Advertisement) 66
VI.G. Wordlist 67
VI.H. Exercise: predicting words 67
VI.I. Translation Exercise 67
VI.J Conversation based on the advertisement: **Insto** 68
VI.K. Sentence Construction Exercises 68
VI.L. Oral and Written Expression 68
VI.F. English version: **Insto** 69

CHAPTER VII

VII.A. Reading Passage: **Mencari** 70
Notes 71
VII.B. Wordlist 71
VII C. Comprehension 72
VII.D. Grammar 72
VII.D.1 The use of the word **diri** 72
VII.D.2 The use of the word **sendiri** 73
VII.D.3 The use of **sendiri, seorang diri** and **sendirian** 73
VII.D.4 Other uses and meanings of **sendiri** and its derivatives 74
VII.D.5 The use of **pribadi** and its derivatives 74

VII.E.	Language Usage	75
VII.E.1	The use of **tinggal** and its derivatives	75
VII.E.2	The use of **dapat** and its derivatives	76
VII.E.1&2	Exercises	77
VII.F.	The use of **semaunya, sekehendaknya** and **sesukanya**	77
VII.G.	Sentence Construction	78
VII.H.	Additional Exercise:Translation from English to Indonesian	78
VII.I.	Oral and Written Expression	79
VII.A.	English Version: **Searching**	79
CHAPTER VIII: Revision		80
VIII.A.	Reading and Comprehension: **Ke Luar Negeri**	80
	Notes	81
VIII.B.	Wordlist	82
VIII.C.	Comprehension	82
VIII.D.-VIII.H.	A series of revision exercises based on Chapters I-VII	83
CHAPTER IX		
IX.A.	Reading Passage: **Manusia Indonesia**	85
	Cultural Notes	86
IX.B.	Wordlist	87
IX.C.	Comprehension	88
IX.D.	Grammar: Revision and Development — the position of adjectives	89
IX.D	Exercises	90
IX.E.	Language Usage: The use of the word **gerangan**	90
IX.E.	Exercises	91
IX.F.	Use of Words and Phrases	91
IX.F.	The use of **benar** and its derivatives	91
IX.F.	Exercises	92
IX.G.	The use of **tuju** and its derivatives	93
IX.G.	Exercises	94
IX.H.	Oral and Written Expression	95
IX.A.	English Version: **The Indonesian Character**	95
CHAPTER X		
X.A.	Reading Passage: **Pelayan Elevator**	97
X.B.	Wordlist	98
X.C.	Comprehension	99
X.D.	Grammar	99
X.D.1	The use of **tak/belum + re-duplicated root +nya**	99
X.D.1	Exercises	101
X.D.2&3	The use of **root + me verb** in various contexts	101
X.D.2	Exercises	102
X.D.3	The use of **root + me verb** and **saling +me verb**	103
X.D.3	Exercises	103
X.D.4	The use of **root + me verb** with different meanings	104
X.E.	Language Usage	105
X.E.1	The use of the word **berat** in various contexts	105

X.E.1 Translation Exercises 105
X.E.2 The use of **sesuai** and its derivatives 106
X.E.2 Translation Exercises 107
X.F. Proverbs 107
X.A. English Version: **Lift Attendant** 107

CHAPTER XI
XI.A. Reading Passage: **Cita-Cita Seorang Wartawan** 109
XI.B. Wordlist 110
XI.C. Comprehension 111
XI.D. Grammar: Revision and development—the use of **pe + root** forms in various contexts 112
XI.D.1 **pe + root** indicating the person performing the action 112
XI.D.2 **pe + root** indicating the instrument or means by which the action is perfomed 112
XI.D.3 **pe + root** denoting a characteristic quality or feature of behaviour of a person 113
XI.D.1&3 Exercises 113
XI.D.1, 2&3 Exercises 114
XI.E. Additional Exercises 114
XI.F. Language Usage 115
XI.F.1 The use of **suatu** and **sesuatu** 115
XI.F.2 The use of the word **satu** 116
XI.F.3 The use of the word **kali** 116
XI.F.4 The use of **tarik** and its derivatives 117
XI.F.1, 2, 3&4 Exercises 118
XI.G. Oral and Written Expression 119
XI.A. English Version: **Ideals of a Journalist** 119

CHAPTER XII
XII.A. Reading Passage: **Raumanen** 121
XII.B. Wordlist 123
XII.C. Comprehension 124
XII.D. Grammar 124
XII.D.1, 2, 3, 4&5 The use of the particle **-lah** in various contexts 124
XII.E.1 The use of **mem- per + root** and the **me- root +kan** verbs derived from adjectives 126
XII.E.2 The use of **mem- per + root** verbs derived from nouns 128
XII.E.3 The use of **beroleh** and **memperoleh** 129
XII.E.4 The use of **berbuat** and **memperbuat** 130
XII.F. Use of Words and Phrases: The use of the word **sampai** in various contexts 130
XII.G. Vocabulary Expansion: Compound Words 132
XII.H. Exercises: Using additional compound words 133
XII.I. Oral and Written Expression 134
XII.A. English Version: **Raumanen** 134

CHAPTER XIII
XIII.A. Reading Passage: **Kebun di Tanjung** 136

XIII.B. Wordlist 138
XIII.C. Comprehension 140
XIII.D. Proverbs 141
XIII.E. Grammar 141
XIII.E.1 The use of **root + an** forms in various contexts 142
XIII.E.2 **Root + an** forms as adjectives 143
XIII.E.1&2 Exercises 144
XIII.F.1 The use of **ber + noun root** verbs 144
XIII.F.2 The use of **ber + noun root + kan** verbs 145
XIII.F.1&2 Exercises 146
XIII.G. Additional Exercises 146
XIII.H. Language Usage 147
XIII.H.1 The use of the words **suami, istri** and **kawin** and their derivatives 147
XIII.I.1—5 The use of **juga** and **pula** in various contexts 148
XIII.J. Vocabulary Expansion 151
XIII.A. English Version: **The Plantation on the Promontory** 152

CHAPTER XIV
XIV.A. Reading Passage: **Marah** 155
XIV.B. Wordlist 157
XIV.C. Comprehension 157
XIV.D.1 Grammar: The use of **pe + root + an** and **per + root + an** derivatives in various contexts 158
XIV.D.2 **Per- + root + an nouns** 160
XIV.D 3 **Pember- + root + an nouns** 162
XIV.D 4 **Pe + root + an** and **per + root** forms derived from nouns 162
XIV.D.1, 2, 3&4 Exercises 164
XIV.E.1&2 **Ke + root + an** forms derived from verbs, adverbs, adjectives and nouns 164
XIV.E.3 Exercises 166
XIV.F. The use of **-wan/-wati** and **-man** derivatives 167
XIV.F.1&2 Exercises 168
XIV.G. Language Usage: The use of the conjunctions **sambil, seraya, waktu, sementara, walaupun** and **sedangkan** 168
XIV.A. English Version: **Angry** 170

CHAPTER XV: Revision 172
XV.A. Reading and Comprehension: **Kemajuan?** 172
XV.B. Wordlist 173
XV.C.—XV.K. A series of revision exercises based on the work covered 174

CHAPTER XVI
Introduction 183
XVI.A. Reading and Comprehension: **Inem** 185
XVI.B. Homework 193
XVI.C. Reading and Comprehension: **Darah Timor** 193

XVI.D. Homework 198
XVI.A. English Version: **Inem** 198
XVI.C. English Version: **Timorese Blood** 207

WORD LIST 215

BAB PERTAMA

(Chapter I)

I.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)

Bacalah artikel yang di bawah ini **dengan saksama.**
(Read the article below **carefully.**)

KATA 'ANDA'[1] GENAP[2] 20 TAHUN

Tahukah Anda dalam tahun 1977 ini genaplah 20 tahun usia **perkataan**[3] 'anda' sejak ia mulai dipakai dalam masyarakat Indonesia sebagai **kata ganti**[4] orang kedua?

Tahukah Anda **penemu**[5] perkataan 'anda' itu seorang **perwira**[6] **Angkatan Udara**[7] Republik Indonesia (AURI), **pangkatnya**[8] kapten dan namanya Sabirin?

Tahukah pula Anda perkataan 'anda' itu diperkenalkan pertama kali dalam harian 'Pedoman' Kamis tanggal 28 Februari 1957?

Profesor Sutan Takdir Alisjahbana, **pelopor**[9] dan **pembina**[10] Bahasa Indonesia, dalam 'Pedoman Minggu' tanggal 14 April 1957 **menyatakan**[11] setujunya mem(p)opulerkan perkataan 'anda', **sedangkan**[12] Prof. Poerbatjaraka seorang ahli bahasa dan kebudayaan Jawa ketika membicarakan perkataan 'anda' dalam 'Pedoman Minggu' tanggal 28 April 1957, tidak menyatakan **apakah**[13] dia setuju atau tidak terhadap pemakaian 'anda' sebagai kata ganti. Kenapa beliau tidak menyokong untuk **menggalakkan**[14] pemakaian kata 'anda' itu?

Yang menjadi pertanyaan waktu itu ialah apakah masyarakat dapat menerima perkataan 'anda' untuk dipakai seperti perkataan 'you' dalam bahasa Inggris. Sabirin **menggali**[15] perkataan 'anda' dari **Kamus**[16] Modern Bahasa Indonesia yang disusun oleh Sutan Mohammad Zain. Menurut kamus itu arti 'anda' ialah 'yang mulia' atau 'yang terhormat'. Sebelum memperkenalkan perkataan 'anda' itu, Sabirin berkonsultasi **terlebih dahulu**[17] dengan Sutan Mohammad Zain. Ahli bahasa ini setuju kata 'anda' itu dipakai sebagai kata ganti berarti 'you'.

Dewasa ini **penyiar**[18] acara TVRI **menggunakan**[19] perkataan 'anda'. Tidak saja di Indonesia, tetapi juga di Malaysia dan Singapura perkataan 'anda' sudah umum dan **lazim**[20] dipakai, misalnya pramugari-pramugari dalam **pesawat terbang**[21] Singapura dan Malaysia.

Sesungguhnya,[22]**jasa**[23] Kapten Sabirin **menemukan**[24] perkataan 'anda' tidak boleh dikecilkan begitu saja. Dua puluh tahun yang lalu, Profesor Sutan Takdir Alisjahbana menyatakan **makna hakiki**[25] perkataan 'anda' adalah pendemokrasian dalam kata ganti. **Maka**[26] mem(p)opulerkan

kata 'anda' itu berarti juga membantu **tumbuhnya**[27] masyarakat Indonesia yang demokratis.

Kiranya[28] diakui oleh umum, pekerjaan wartawan Indonesia itu **banyak sedikitnya**[29] ada pula **hubungannya**[30] dengan usaha **pembinaan**[31] Bahasa Indonesia. **Berhubungan dengan**[32] itu rasanya tidak salah, apabila wartawan **menghargakan**[33] jasa Kapten Sabirin dalam menemukan dan memperkenalkan perkataan 'anda'.

H. Rosihan Anwar (saduran)
28 Februari 1977

NOTES

Anda which means 'you' or 'your', as you have learnt from reading the article, is an artificially created neutral term of address.

It is frequently used in the media to address the general public, as in television, radio and advertising.

It is also used by younger middle-class people, mostly students, to address each other in gatherings and meetings but not, as a rule, in public meetings when young and old are present and formal courtesies are observed.

Unless one is familiar with the circumstances in which its use is acceptable, and will not cause offence, it is not advisable for foreigners visiting Indonesia to use 'anda'.

It is difficult to explain when its use is acceptable, since the reaction to it varies from individual to individual.

Despite the respect implied in the meaning of the word 'anda', many people in the regions, who still firmly adhere to tradition, somehow feel that the word is not adequate or polite enough to use in addressing people to whom one should show respect, such as those who are advanced in age or who have senior positions in various institutions.

On the other hand, as a foreigner, you may find yourself being addressed as 'anda' by an Indonesian speaker equating 'anda' with the English neutral 'you'. In such a situation, you must use your own discretion if the 'status' of the person addressing you is not obvious.

I.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts.

1. anda: you, your
2. genap: reach, complete
3. perkataan: word, expression
4. kata ganti: pronoun
5. penemu: discoverer
6. perwira: officer
7. Angkatan Udara: Air Force
8. pangkat: rank
9. pelopor: pioneer
10. pembina: developer
11. menyatakan: to state
12. sedangkan: whereas

13. apakah: whether
14. menggalakkan: to encourage, promote
15. menggali: to dig out, unearth
16. kamus: dictionary
17. terlebih dahulu: first of all
18. penyiar: announcer
19. menggunakan: to use
20. lazim: usual, general
21. pesawat terbang: aeroplane
22. sesungguhnya: truly, in fact, indeed
23. jasa: service
24. menemukan: to find, discover
25. makna hakiki: the true inner meaning
26. maka: then, therefore
27. tumbuhnya: the growth
28. kiranya: probably, it seems that
29. banyak sedikitnya: more or less
30. hubungan; connection, relation
31. pembinaan: developing, development
32. berhubungan dengan: in connection with
33. menghargakan: to honour, be appreciative of

I.C. Comprehension

Jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan di bawah ini dengan kalimat yang **lengkap** dalam Bahasa Indonesia.
(Answer the questions below in Indonesian with **full** sentences).

1. Sudah berapa lama(kah) perkataan 'anda' dipakai dalam masyarakat Indonesia?
2. Harian apa(kah) yang pertama kali memakai perkataan 'anda'?
3. Siapa(kah) penemu kata 'anda' itu?
4. Apa(kah) arti perkataan 'anda' menurut Kamus Modern Bahasa Indonesia oleh Sutan Mohammad Zain?
5. Apa(kah) yang menjadi pertanyaan bagi Kapten Sabirin sebelum memperkenalkan perkataan 'anda'?
6. Selain di Indonesia, di negeri mana(kah) kata 'anda' juga sudah umum dipakai dewasa ini?
7. Siapa-siapa misalnya yang sudah biasa menggunakan perkataan 'anda'?
8. Apa(kah) yang dinyatakan oleh Profesor Sutan Takdir mengenai arti hakiki dalam penyebaran kata 'anda'?

I.D. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

The use of question marker **-kah**
The question marker **-kah** is commonly used in Bahasa Indonesia, but as a rule in formal language i.e. at meetings, conferences, interviews and the like, in standard written language and in the press.
It rarely occurs in informal situations. In these cases a question is usually signalled by a rising intonation.
When you come across **-kah** in your reading, it is useful to note the context in which it occurs.
There are two ways of forming a question with particle **-kah** in the following examples:

i. **Apakah + statement**. Any statement can be transformed into a 'yes/no' question by adding **the particle -kah to the question indicator apa**.
ii. By adding **-kah** to a **verb** or **adjective**.

I.D.1. Observe carefully the **word order** and the **position** of the particle **-kah** in the following set of questions.
The examples show three ways of asking the same question, but with differences in emphasis. Give natural English equivalents of the following examples.

a. 1. **Apakah** dia setuju?
   2. Dia **setujukah**?
   3. **Setujukah** dia?

b. 1. **Apakah** Ibu masih tidur?
   2. Ibu **masih tidurkah**?
   3. **Masih tidurkah** Ibu?

c. 1. **Apakah** dia tidak bekerja hari ini?
   2. Dia **tidak bekerjakah** hari ini?
   3. **Tidak bekerjakah** dia hari ini?

d. 1. **Apakah** dia merokok?
   2. Dia **merokokkah**?
   3. **Merokokkah** dia?

e. 1. **Apakah** kamus itu mahal?
   2. Kamus itu **mahalkah?**
   3. **Mahalkah** kamus itu?

f. 1. **Apakah** pidatonya membosankan?
   2. Pidatonya **membosankankah**?
   3. **Membosankankah** pidatonya?

I.D.1. Remarks

The sentences above contain simple root verbs (see a. and b.), ber-root verb (see c.), intransitive me-root verb (see d.), adjective (see e.) and -kan verb which is used in **an adjectival sense** (see f.). In sentences of this type, the inversion of subject and verb or subject and predicative adjective is very common.

I.D.2. The particle **-kah** is also often attached to other question words in a question, with no difference in meaning. Give English equivalents of the following sentences.

a. **Apakah** yang terletak di atas meja itu?
b. **Siapa-siapakah** yang ikut dalam pemberontakan itu?

c. **Mengapakah/Kenapakah** Pemerintah tidak mengumumkan hal itu?
d. **Kapankah/Bilakah** hasil ujian itu akan diumumkan?
e. **Berapakah** ongkos kapal terbang dari sini ke Surabaya?
f. **Bagaimanakah** keadaan di Indonesia sekarang?
g. **Manakah** yang lebih baik? Ini atau itu?
h. **Ke manakah** suami-istri itu akan pindah?
i. **Di laci manakah** surat itu kauletakkan?
j. **Dari arah manakah** suara itu datang?

I.D.3. The particle **-kah** is attached to a **classifier** or **measure word** when it is used with the **question word berapa** to form a question.

a. **Berapa orangkah** Anda bersaudara?
b. **Berapa batangkah** dia merokok sehari?
c. **Berapa ekorkah** ayamnya yang mati?
d. **Berapa helaikah** dia membeli kain batik itu?
e. **Berapa jamkah** Anda bekerja seminggu?
f. **Berapa dolarkah** sewa kamar itu sehari?
g **Berapa rupiahkah** satu dolar Amerika sekarang?
h. **Berapa kilokah** berat kopor Anda itu?
i. **Berapa cangkirkah** kopi yang harus saya buat?
j. **Berapa meterkah** tinggi(nya) gunung itu?

Note: In informal situations **-kah** rarely occurs.

I.D.3. Homework (Pekerjaan Rumah)

Without using the question marker '-kah' express the following questions in Indonesian:

a. Ask Udin **how many cigarettes** a day he usually smokes.
b. Ask Mr Rustam **how many years** he has been living in that house.
c. Ask Anwar **how many times** a day he has to take that medicine
d. Ask Mr Bambang **how many times** a week his wife plays tennis.
e. Ask Miss Suarni **how many hours** a day she works.
f. Ask Dad **how long** he had to wait for the bus this morning.
g. Ask Mum **how many rooms** that house has.
h. Ask Ratna **how many days** she was sick last week.
i. Ask the teacher (Mrs Harun) **how many rupiahs** we have to pay.
j. Ask Mum **how many bottles** of milk we have to buy.

I.D.4. Observe carefully the word order and the position of the particle **-kah** in the following subject focus (s.f.) and object focus (o.f.) constructions. Each example shows three possible ways of asking the question. Note the English equivalents of the following examples.

a. 1. Dia **sedang menunggu siapakah** di sana? (s.f.)
2. **Sedang menunggu siapakah** dia di sana? (s.f.)
3. **Siapakah** yang sedang ditunggunya di sana? (o.f.)

b. 1. Mereka **akan membuat apakah**? (s.f.)
2. **Akan membuat apakah** mereka? (s.f.)
3. **Apakah** yang akan dibuat mereka? (o.f.)

c. 1. **Sabirinkah** yang menemukan perkataan 'anda'? (s.f.)
2. Yang menemukan perkataan 'anda' **Sabirinkah**? (s.f.)
3. Perkataan 'anda' ditemukan (oleh) **Sabirinkah**? (o.f.)

d. 1. Anda **akan menyeberangi sungai itukah**? (s.f.)
2. **Akan menyeberangi sungai itukah** Anda? (s.f.)
3. **Sungai itukah** yang akan Anda seberangi? (o.f.)

e. 1. Anda **masih membantu Aminkah**? (s.f.)
2. **Masih membantu Aminkah** Anda? (s.f.)
3. **Aminkah** yang masih Anda bantu? (o.f.)

I.D.4. English equivalents

a. 1. & 2. Who is she waiting for there?
3. Who is it that she's waiting for there?

b. 1. & 2. What are they going to make?
3. What is it that they are going to make?

c. 1. 2. & 3. Was it Sabirin who discovered the word 'anda'?

d. 1. & 2. Are you going to cross that river?
3. Is it that river that you are going to cross?

e. 1. & 2. Are you still suppporting Amin?
3. Is it Amin that you are still supporting?

I.D.4. Remarks

It will be seen from the above examples that **the different positions** of **'-kah'** and **the form of the sentences** have an important effect on the focus of the questions. In subject focus sentences of this type the inversion of subject and predicate is common.

I.D.4. Exercises

Give English equivalents of the following questions.

1. **Perkataan andakah** yang ditemukan oleh Sabirin?
2. **Aminkah** yang sering Anda bantu?
3. **Andakah** yang sering membantu Amin?

4. **Pilem itukah** yang menakutkan anak-anak itu?
5. **Satekah** yang paling disukainya atau **bakmi gorengkah**?
6. **Sayur atau bungakah** yang akan ditanam Ibu di sana?

I.D.5. Retain **'kah'** but replace **'pernah'**, the word queried in the model sentence, with the one given and master the sentences and the responses.

1.	Pernahkah Anda pergi ke sana?	Tidak, tidak pernah.
2.	sering	Tidak, tidak begitu sering.
3.	jarang	Ya, jarang sekali.
4.	dapat	Ya, tentu dapat.
5.	perlu	Ya, perlu.
6.	sudah	Belum.
7.	belum	Sudah, sudah beberapa kali.
8.	harus	Tidak harus, tetapi saya mau.
9.	ingin	Ya, ingin sekali.
10.	mau	Tidak, tidak mau.
11.	suka	Tidak, tidak begitu suka.
12.	boleh	Tidak, tidak boleh.

I.E. Penggunaan Bahasa (Language Usage)

Penggunaan kata dan ungkapan (Use of words and phrases)
Perhatikanlah **bentuk** dan **arti** kata-kata yang dicetak tebal dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. Kemudian kuasailah kalimat-kalimat itu. (Observe carefully the **form** and the **meaning** of the words in bold type in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.)

I.E.1. ganti, berganti, mengganti: to replace, change, substitute, compensate

a.	Dia mau **mengganti** namanya.	a.	He wants **to change** his name.
b.	Saya harus **mengganti** bukunya yang hilang.	b.	I have **to replace** his book which was lost.
c.	Pembantu yang kurang cakap itu harus **diganti.**	c.	The incompetent assistant must **be replaced**.
d.	Inilah **(peng)ganti** buku yang hilang itu.	d.	This is **the replacement** for the lost book.
e.	Bila beliau pensiun, siapa mungkin **penggantinya**?	e.	When he retires, who could possibly be his **successor**?
f.	Kata 'anda' mulai dipakai dalam masyarakat Indonesia untuk pertama kali sebagai	f.	The word 'anda' began to be used in Indonesian society for the first time as a second person

	Indonesian		English
	kata ganti orang kedua pada tahun 1957.		**pronoun** in the year 1957.
g.	Bambang yang **menggantikan** ayahnya.	g.	It was Bambang who **took** his father's **place**.
h.	Kalau saya mau pergi ke Surabaya dari Jakarta, apa saya harus **(ber)ganti kereta api**?	h.	If I want to go to Surabaya from Jakarta, do I have **to change trains**?
i.	Tunggu sebentar, saya harus **(ber)ganti/mengganti baju**.	i.	Wait a minute, I have **to change** my **clothes**.
j.	Mereka **berganti-ganti** menjaga Ibu, ketika beliau sakit.	j.	They **took turns** taking care of Mother when she was sick.

I.E.2.
nyata: clear, obvious, evident
menyatakan: to state, express, explain, declare

	Indonesian		English
a.	Dia bersalah; itu sudah **nyata**.	a.	He is guilty; it is **obvious**.
b.	Itu sudah **nyata**, tidak usah kita bicarakan lagi.	b.	That's **obvious**, we don't need to discuss it any further.
c.	Makin lama aku berbicara dengan dia makin **nyata** apa tujuannya.	c.	The longer I talked to him the **clearer** became his purpose.
d.	Di dalam surat itu **dinyatakannya** alasannya untuk minta berhenti.	d.	In that letter he **stated** his reasons for resigning.
e.	Dia memberi Minah sebuah buku untuk **menyatakan** terima kasihnya.	e.	He gave Minah a book **to express** his thanks.
f.	Waktu itulah Jepang **menyatakan** perang dengan Amerika.	f.	It was then Japan **declared** war on America.
g.	**Kenyataannya** ialah bahwa dia benar.	g.	**The fact** is that he is right.
h.	Dia harus menerima **kenyataan.**	h.	He has to accept **the truth**.
i.	Dia **ternyata** anak teman saya.	i.	He **proved** to be the child of my friend.
j.	**Ternyata** dia seorang yang peminum.	j.	**Evidently** he is a habitual drinker.

I.E.1&2. Exercises

After studying the meaning and usage of the words **ganti** and **nyata** with their derivatives translate the following English sentences into Bahasa Indonesia.

a. She is a very good leader, and she will be difficult **to replace**.
b. Have you been introduced to Mr Suparman's **successor**?
c. When flying from Jakarta to Ujungpandang we don't have **to change** planes.
d. We **take turns** to use the typewriter.
e. What do people **replace** sugar with in their coffee?
f. It was **obvious** that he was guilty.
g. However hard it is I have to accept **the truth (fact)**.
h. In that article **it was explained** how Dogol escaped from that prison.
i. The news in that daily **proved** false.
j. All members were given the opportunity **to express** their opinions in that meeting.

I.E.3. harga: price

Menghargakan and **menghargai** mean to honour, respect, be appreciative of. **Menghargakan** should always be followed by a thing honoured but **menghargai** may be followed by a thing honoured as well as a person.

a.	Berapa **harga** kamus itu?	a.	What is **the price** of that dictionary?
b.	Kita tidak akan bisa membeli hadiah yang **berharga** ribu-an rupiah untuknya.	b.	We will not be able to buy a gift that **costs** thousands of rupiahs for her.
c.	Buku ini **berharga** sekali bagi saya.	c.	This book is very **precious** to me.
d.	Itu adalah penemuan yang **berharga** sekali.	d.	That is a very **valuable** discovery.
e.	Dia sangat **menghargakan/ menghargai** jasa Kapten Sabirin.	e.	He **respects/appreciates** the service of Captain Sabirin very much.
f.	Kami betul-betul **menghar-gai** semua pertolongan Anda.	f.	We very much **appreciate** all your help.
g.	Kapten Sabirin sangat **dihar-gai** oleh teman-temannya.	g.	Captain Sabirin is well **respected** by his friends.
h.	Dia diberi sebuah jam oleh penduduk desa itu, sebagai tanda **penghargaan** atas jasanya.	h.	He was presented with a clock by the people of that village as a token of **appreciation** for his service.

I.F. The names in bold in the following sentences occur in the passage. Note them carefully. Each has played an important role in the development of the Indonesian language.

1. Kapten **Sabirin** seorang perwira Angkatan Udara Republik Indonesia (AURI).
2. Profesor **Sutan Takdir Alisjahbana**, pelopor dan pembina Bahasa Indonesia.
3. Almarhum Prof **Poerbatjaraka** seorang ahli bahasa dan kebudayaan Jawa. (Beliau meninggal pada tahun 1964, berusia 78 tahun.)
4. Almarhum **Sutan Mohamad Zain** seorang ahli bahasa, penyusun Kamus Modern Bahasa Indonesia.
5. **Rosihan Anwar** seorang wartawan Indonesia yang terkenal.

I.G. Homework (Pekerjaan Rumah)

Comprehension (Pengertian)

Multiple Choice (Pilihan berganda)

The purpose of the multiple choice exercises is to give students practice in quickly grasping the totality of a sentence — its meaning, its grammatical forms, its nuances and its structure.

Multiple choice questions: Choose the two answers which you think are correct in the following:

1. a) Profesor Poerbatjaraka menyokong untuk mem(p)opulerkan perkataan 'anda'.
   b) Yang setuju untuk menggalakkan pemakaian kata 'anda' ialah Profesor Sutan Takdir Alisjahbana.
   c) Takdir Alisjahbana dan Poerbatjaraka, kedua ahli bahasa itu tidak bekerja sama untuk mem(p)opulerkan kata 'anda'.

2. a) Yang pertama kali memperkenalkan perkataan 'anda' harian 'Pedoman'.
   b) Sabirin seorang ahli bahasa dan kebudayaan Jawa.
   c) Perkataan 'anda' diambil dari Kamus Modern Bahasa Indonesia yang disusun oleh Sutan Mohammad Zain.

3. Sekarang kata 'anda' telah dipakai oleh:
   a) seluruh rakyat Indonesia, Malaysia dan Singapura.
   b) pramugari-pramugari dalam pesawat terbang Malaysia dan Singapura.
   c) penyiar acara Televisi Republik Indonesia.

4. Wartawan, penulis artikel ini,
   a) sama sekali tidak menghargai jasa Kapten Sabirin.

b) betul-betul mau menghargai jasa Kapten Sabirin.

c) berpendapat bahwa penemuan kata 'anda' harus dihargakan, karena penemuan itu amat penting.

5. Artikel mengenai kata 'anda' ini ditulis oleh Rosihan Anwar:

a) dimuat dalam sebuah harian pada tanggal 28 Februari 1977.

b) untuk memperingati hari ulang tahun kata 'anda' yang ke-20.

c) dimuat dalam harian 'Pedoman Minggu' tanggal 14 April 1957.

I.H. Mengemukakan buah fikiran secara lisan maupun tertulis (Oral and Written Expression)

i. Pertanyaan.

Apa(kah) sebabnya Rosihan Anwar sebagai seorang wartawan merasa perlu untuk menulis sebuah artikel berhubungan dengan genapnya 20 tahun kata 'anda'? Dengan tujuan untuk memberi informasi kepada masyarakat(kah)? Untuk membina Bahasa Indonesia(kah) atau untuk menghargai jasa Kapten Sabirin? Atau dengan tujuan merangkap ketiganya? Siapkanlah sebuah jawaban yang panjangnya tidak lebih dari 150 kata.

ii. Contoh jawaban (Model answer)

Bacalah contoh jawaban ini dengan teliti dan bandingkanlah dengan jawab yang Anda siapkan. (Read this example carefully and compare it with the one you have prepared.)

Saya kira, sebagai seorang wartawan, tujuan Rosihan Anwar yang utama ialah untuk memberi informasi kepada masyarakat.

Dia juga menyatakan bahwa secara tidak langsung pekerjaan wartawan ada hubungannya dengan pembinaan Bahasa Indonesia. Jadi maksudnya tentu juga untuk lebih mem(p)opulerkan pemakaian kata 'anda' itu.

Selain dari itu dia juga sangat merasakan bagaimana pentingnya perkataan 'anda' dalam persuratkabaran. Para wartawan harus berwawancara dengan orang-orang dari berbagai lapisan rakyat. Kalau tidak memakai perkataan 'anda' mereka harus tahu memilih dan menggunakan kata panggilan lain dengan tepat. Jumlah kata panggilan ini cukup banyak seperti: Bapak, Ibu, Nyonya, Tuan, Saudara dan lain-lain yang maksudnya 'you' atau 'your' dalam bahasa Inggeris.

Jadi sebagai seorang wartawan dia sangat menghargakan penemuan kata 'anda' dan melalui artikelnya dia menyatakan penghargaan kepada Kapten Sabirin penemu kata 'anda' itu.

I.I. Peribahasa (Proverb)

Untuk direnungkan (To reflect on)

Sedikit demi sedikit, lama-lama menjadi bukit. (Little by little in time becomes a hill.)

I.A. English version

THE WORD 'ANDA' IS 20 YEARS OLD

Did you know that in 1977 it will be 20 years since the word 'anda' first began to be used in Indonesian society as a second person pronoun?

Did you know that the discoverer of the word 'anda' was an officer in the Air Force of the Republic of Indonesia (AURI), that he held the rank of captain and that his name was Sabirin?

Did you also know that the word 'anda' was introduced for the first time on Thursday 28 February 1957, in the daily newspaper *Pedoman?*

Professor Sutan Takdir Alisjahbana, pioneer and developer of the Indonesian language, stated his support for the popularisation of the word 'anda' in *Pedoman Minggu* on 14 April 1957, whereas Professor Poerbatjaraka, an expert in Javanese language and culture, when he discussed the word in *Pedoman Minggu* on 28 April 1957, did not indicate whether or not he agreed with the use of 'anda' as a pronoun. Why didn't he give his support to promoting the use of 'anda'?

The question at that time was whether society would accept the use of 'anda'; as a pronoun similar to the English 'you'. Sabirin unearthed the word 'anda' from the *Modern Dictionary of the Indonesian Language* compiled by Sutan Mohammad Zain. According to that dictionary, the meaning of the word 'anda' is 'the honourable' or 'the respected'. Before the introduction of the word, Sabirin first consulted Sutan Mohammad Zain. The linguist agreed with the use of 'anda' as a pronoun meaning 'you'.

Nowadays, the announcers on Indonesian National Television programs use the word 'anda'. The word 'anda' is common and in general use, not just in Indonesia, but also in Malaysia and Singapore as well, for instance by the hostesses on Singaporean and Malaysian aircraft.

Indeed the service which was performed by Sabirin in discovering the word 'anda' should not be underestimated. Twenty years ago, Professor Sutan Takdir Alisjahbana explained that the real significance of the use of 'anda' was the democratisation of the pronoun. Therefore the popularising of the word 'anda' meant also assisting in the growth of a democractic Indonesian society.

It is probably generally acknowledged that the work of the Indonesian journalist more or less also bears a relationship to the development of the Indonesian language. In this connection it would not be felt inappropriate for journalists to honour the service of Captain Sabirin in discovering and introducing the word 'anda'.

BAB KEDUA

(Chapter II)

II.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)

Pelajarilah sajak yang di bawah ini dengan teliti, bacalah dengan (suara) keras dan dengan perasaan. (Study the poem below carefully and read it aloud with feeling.)

BUNGLON[1]
Untuk 'Pahlawanku'

Melayang[2] gagah, **meluncur**[3] **rampis**[4]
Menentang[5] tenang **'alam semadi'**.[6]
Tiada[7] **sedar** [8] **mara bahaya**,[9]
'Alam semesta'[10] memberi senjata.

Selayang terbang ke rumpun bambu,
Pindah meluncur ke padi masak,
Bermain **mesra**[11] di balik dahan,
Tiada satu dapat mengganggu.

Akh, sungguh puas berwarna **aneka** [12]
Gampang[13] **menyamar**[14] mudah **menjelma**[15]
Asalkan[16] diri menurut suasana.

O, **Tuhanku**,[17] **biarkan**[18] **daku**[19] hidup sengsara,
Biar lahirku **diancam**[20] **derita**,[21]
Tidak daku **sudi**[22] **serupa**.[23]

Azhar Munir Samsu

Notes (Catatan):

a. Bunglon binatang yang sering terdapat di pohon-pohon. Warna aslinya hijau. Binatang ini mempunyai keistimewaan khusus, yaitu dapat menukar-nukar warna tubuhnya sesuai dengan tempat dia berada. Dia menukar warna tubuhnya untuk menyembunyikan dirinya dari musuhnya.

b. Bunglon dipakai sebagai **kiasan**[24] terhadap orang yang tidak **berpendirian**[25] tetap. Sekali berpihak ke mari, lain kali berpihak ke sana dengan tujuan untuk kepentingan diri sendiri (opportunist).

II.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts.

1. bunglon: chameleon
2. melayang: to fly, soar, leap
3. meluncur: to glide away, slide
4. rampis/ramping: slender, slightly built
5. menentang: to oppose, confront
6. alam semadi: tranquil world
7. tiada: tidak ada
8. sedar: aware, conscious
9. mara bahaya: all sorts of dangers
10. semesta: the whole, all over
11. mesra: absorbed
12. aneka: different, all sorts of, all kinds of
13. gampang: easy, easily
14. menyamar: to be in disguise
15. menjelma: to be transformed, turn into
16. asalkan: as long as, provided that, on condition (that)
17. Tuhanku: dear God
18. biarkan: let, permit
19. daku: aku
20. diancam: to be threatened
21. derita: suffering, hardship
22. sudi: willing, prepared
23. serupa: similar, alike, of the same kind
24. kiasan: symbol
25. berpendirian: to have a standpoint, point of view

II.C. Comprehension

Jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan di bawah ini dengan **kalimat yang lengkap.**

1. Apa(kah) arti kiasan 'bunglon'?
2. Apa(kah) sebab bunglon tidak sadar akan mara bahaya?
3. Berwarna apa bunglon kalau sedang bermain di balik dahan?

4. Apa warna padi masak dan apa pula warna rumpun bambu?
5. Apa(kah) si 'Aku' setuju dengan sifat orang 'Bunglon'? Buktikanlah jawaban Anda dengan mengutip beberapa kalimat dari sajak.

II.D. Penggunaan Bahasa (Language Usage)

Penggunaan kata dan ungkapan (Use of words and phrases)

Perhatikanlah bentuk dan arti kata-kata yang dicetak tebal dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. Kemudian kuasailah kalimat-kalimat itu.

(Observe carefully the form and the meaning of the words in bold in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.)

II.D.1.

samar: dim, vague, indistinct
menyamar (intrans): to be disguised, be in disguise
menyamarkan (trans): to disguise

a. Cahaya lampu di kamar itu **samar-samar.**	a. The lamp light in that room is **very dim.**
b. Dia bisa masuk ke daerah musuh itu, karena dia **menyamar** sebagai seorang penduduk asli daerah tersebut.	b. He could enter the enemy territory, because he **was disguised** as a native of that area.
c. Walaupun Dogol pergi ke kota **menyamar** sebagai seorang perempuan, polisi segera mengetahui siapa dia, karena gerak-geriknya, suaranya sudah dikenal betul oleh polisi setempat.	c. Even though Dogol went to the city **disguised** as a woman, the police at once knew who he was, because his mannerisms and voice were well known to the local police.
d. Sebagai seorang mata-mata Rustam adakalanya harus **menyamarkan dirinya**, supaya dia tidak dikenal orang.	d. As a spy Rustam at times had to **disguise himself** so that people would not recognise him.
e. Di bawah lampu yang bewarna-warna itu, yang sengaja **disamarkan**, kelihatan anak-anak remaja berdansa sampai jauh malam.	e. Under coloured lights which were intentionally **dimmed**, young people could be seen dancing far into the night.
f. Meskipun Udin gementar ketakutan, dari balik pintu dia memperhatikan rupa dan pakaian pembunuh itu di dalam **kesamaran** malam.	f. Although Udin was shaking with fright, from behind the door he observed the appearance and dress of the murderer in the **dimness** of the night.

g. Kalau menulis untuk majalah dan surat-surat kabar dia memakai **nama samaran.**

g. When writing for journals and newspapers he uses a **pen-name**.

h. Apa **nama samaran** yang dipakainya kalau dia menulis untuk majalah itu?

h. What **pen-name** does he use, when he writes for that magazine?

II.D.2. menjelma (intrans): to take on another form, transform o.s.; menjelmakan (trans): to transform s.t. or s.o.

a. Ulat itu akhirnya **menjelma** menjadi kupu-kupu.

a. The caterpillar finally **turned into** a butterfly.

b. Orang yang beragama Hindu percaya, bahwa tiap-tiap roh orang yang mati akan **menjelma kembali,** masuk ke dalam tubuh lain, tubuh manusia atau binatang.

b. People who follow Hinduism believe that the soul of every person who dies will **be reincarnated** in another body, the body of a person or an animal.

c. Dengan kuas dan cat pelukis muda itu telah berhasil **menjelmakan** pemandangan yang indah sekelilingnya menjadi sebuah karya yang berseni.

c. With a brush and paint the young painter has succeeded in **transforming** the beautiful scenery around him into a work of art.

d. Kami menonton sebuah pilem tentang binatang. Juga diperlihatkan di pilem itu **penjelmaan** seekor ulat menjadi kupu-kupu.

d. We watched a film about animals. Also the film showed the **transformation** of a caterpillar into a butterfly.

II.D.1&2. Exercises

After studying the meaning and the usage of the words **jelma**, **samar** and their derivatives, complete the following sentences by filling in the blanks or adding the necessary words. Use your imagination!

a. "Nanti kalau saya mati saya ingin hidup kembali, **menjelma** sebagai ______________, " katanya.

b. Gampang sekali bagi bunglon untuk **menyamar**, karena dia bisa menukar ______________ tubuhnya.

c. **Menyamar**lah, supaya orang tidak dapat ______________ Anda.

d. Apakah dia selalu ________________nama **samaran** bila dia menulis untuk majalah itu?

e. Pakaian yang indah itu **menjelmakan** dia menjadi wanita yang ____________ sekali.
f. Berita yang ______________ oleh wartawan itu masih **samar-samar**.
g. Orang tua itu mencoba ____________ masa kecilnya yang sudah **samar-samar**.

II.E. Observe carefully **the form** and **the meaning** of the words in bold type and their synonyms in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.

1. biar: so that, although, better

a. Berilah saya uang, **biar/supaya** saya (dapat) membeli roti.	a. Give me money, **so that** I can buy some bread.
b. Masukkanlah sayur dan telur itu ke dalam kulkas, **biar/supaya** tidak lekas busuk.	b. Put the vegetables and eggs into the fridge, **so that** they won't go bad quickly.
c. **Biar/walaupun** kecil, dia kuat.	c. **Although** small, he is strong.
d. **Biar/meskipun** mahal, dibelinya juga.	d. **Although** it was expensive, he bought it all the same.
e. **Biar/lebih baik** mati, **daripada** menyerah kepada musuh.	e. **Better** to die **than** surrender to the enemy.
f. **Biar/lebih baik** miskin, **daripada** kawin dengan dia.	f. **Better** to be poor **than** marry him.
g. 'Ibu, Amin masih tidur. Pukul berapa hari?' kata Minah. **'Biarlah/tidak apa**, hari masih pagi,' jawab Ibu.	g. 'Mother, Amin is still asleep. What time is it?' said Minah. **'Never mind,** it is still early,' answered Mother.
h. **Biarlah/tidak apa,** kalau Bambang tidak mau ikut, kita berdua saja pergi.	h. **Never mind**, if Bambang doesn't want to come, just the two of us will go.
i. **Biarpun begitu/walaupun begitu**, janganlah marah kepadanya.	i. **Nevertheless (even so)** don't be angry with him.

II.E.2. membiarkan: to let, permit, allow, not object

a. Minah **membiarkan/tidak melarang** anak-anaknya merokok.	a. Minah **lets** her children smoke. or: Minah **doesn't object** to her children smoking.
b. Jangan **biarkan** murid-murid berbuat demikian.	b. Don't **let** the pupils carry on (behave) like that.

c.	**Biarkanlah** dahulu!	c.	**Leave** it for a while! or: **Leave** him for the time being!
d.	**Biarkan** dia (yang) memasak.	d.	**Let** him do the cooking. or: **Allow** him to do the cooking.
e.	**Biarkan** dia menyelesaikan masalahnya sendiri. Jangan ikut campur!	e.	**Let** him sort out his problems himself. Don't interfere!

II.E.1&2. Exercises
Give a synonym for each of the words in bold in the following sentences:

a. Banyaklah makan sayur dan buah-buahan, **biar** kamu tetap sehat.
b. Lihatlah! **Biar** pedas dimakannya juga sate itu.
c. "**Biar** aku lapar daripada meminjam uang kepadanya," katanya.
d. Tulislah surat kepada nenekmu, **biar** beliau senang.
e. Mengapa dia **membiarkan** anaknya keluar malam sendiri?

II.F. Observe carefully **the form** and **the meaning** of the words in bold type in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.

1. rupa: appearance, shape, form, kind

a.	Sudah pernahkah Anda makan durian? Bagaimana **rupa**nya dan enak(kah) rasanya?	a.	Have you ever eaten durian? What does it **look like** and is it nice?
b.	Walaupun **rupa** orang itu buruk, hatinya baik.	b	Although **the appearance** of that person is ugly, he is kind.
c.	Di toko itu dapat dibeli **segala rupa** barang.	c.	At that shop **all kinds** of things can be bought.
d.	**Rupanya** dia terlambat lagi hari ini.	d.	**It appears** he is late again today.
e.	Pemberian **berupa apa pun** akan diterima mereka.	e.	They will accept a gift **in whatever form.**
f.	Mereka anak kembar, sebab itulah mereka **serupa**.	f.	They are twins, that is why they're **alike**.
g.	Aku tidak sudi **serupa dengan/menyerupai** bunglon.	g.	I don't care **to be like** a chameleon.
h.	Dia **serupa dengan/ menyerupai** ayahnya—pendiam, tidak banyak bicara.	h.	He **is like/resembles** his father—he is taciturn, doesn't speak much.
i.	Penduduk pulau itu **menyerupai/serupa dengan** penduduk asli di Irian Jaya.	i.	The inhabitants of that island **are like/resemble** the indigenous inhabitants of Irian Jaya.

j.	Di penjara itu perlakuan terhadap tiap orang tahanan **diserupakan(kah)**?	j.	At that prison is every prisoner treated **in the same way**?
k.	'Jangan (kamu) **menyerupakan/serupakan** saya dengan Dogol,' kata orang tahanan politik itu.	k.	'Don't (you) **treat/regard** me as if I were Dogol,' said the political prisoner (or: **treat** me **the same** as Dogol).

II.F.1. Remarks:
Compare the difference between, sentence h) 'Dia **menyerupai** ayahnya.: He **is like** his father.' and sentence k) 'Jangan (kamu) **serupakan** saya dengan Dogol : Don't (you) **treat** me **the same** as Dogol.'
In sentence h) 'ayahnya' is not the recipient of the action, it is rather a kind of complement to the verb. It will be noted that the verb **menyerupai** does not occur in object focus form and thus is **not** transitive.
In sentence k) **'Jangan serupakan saya dengan Dogol' saya** is the object of the verb **serupakan**. The subject 'you' (understood in the context) directs an action to the object **saya**. In other words **saya** is **the object** of the transitive verb **serupakan**. Thus the object focus form of the sentence **'Jangan saya diserupakan dengan Dogol'** is possible.

II.F.2. Study the following sentences carefully and note the special use of the verb **merupakan** in the following sentences.

a.	Pertemuan kali ini **merupakan** pertemuan terakhir untuk tahun ini.	a.	The meeting on this occasion **is** the final meeting for this year.
b.	Itu **merupakan** kekecualian.	b.	That **was** an exception.
c.	Itu **merupakan** kemenangan bagi kita.	c.	That **was** a victory for us.
d.	Itu **merupakan** pikiran yang aneh.	d.	That **was** a strange idea.
e.	Apa(kah) itu **merupakan** ancaman?	e.	Is that **(some sort of)** a threat?
f.	Tahu atau tempe **merupakan** makanan yang lazim di Jawa.	f.	Tahu or tempe **is a type** of food that is common in Java.
g.	Ratna **merupakan** burung dalam sangkar emas.	g.	Ratna **is like** a bird in a golden cage.

II.F.2. Remarks:
The words **pertemuan, kekecualian, kemenangan, pikiran, ancaman,** are all abstract nouns. The word **merupakan** when it is followed by **an abstract noun** is used as an equivalent for the copula **to be** particularly in cases where there is a degree of emphasis.
When it is followed by a **concrete noun,** it means **to be a type of**, or **to be like something** as in sentences f. and g.

The verb **merupakan** in the examples given functions as a copulative (linking) verb. The nouns following it in the examples given are not the recipients of the actions, they are rather a kind of complement to the verb. **A copulative verb** joins **a subject** with **its complement.** Thus, the verb **merupakan** here is **not transitive**, and therefore does not occur in object focus construction.
Such copulative verbs in Bahasa Indonesia are:
menyerupai, menjadi, merasa and **ada** as shown in the previous and following examples.

a. Dia **menyerupai** ibunya.
b. Dia tidak mau **menjadi** guru.
c. Dia **merasa** seorang yang berkuasa besar.
d. Mereka tidak **ada** uang.

II.G. Study the following sentences carefully and note the verb **ubah** and **its derivatives.**

1. ubah, berubah, merubah (transitive): to change, alter, transform.

a.	Nasi ini **sudah berubah** rasanya. Masih baik?	a.	The taste of this rice **has changed.** Is it still good?
b.	Warna daun pohon itu **berubah** dalam musim gugur.	b.	The colour of the leaves of that tree **changes** in autumn.
c.	Sudah lama kita tidak bertemu. Saudara sedikit pun **tidak berubah.**	c.	We haven't seen each other for a long time. You **haven't changed** a bit.
d.	Dia sudah jauh **berubah** sekarang, tidak peminum atau perokok lagi.	d.	He has changed a lot now, he is no longer a heavy drinker or a smoker.
e.	Nasibmu tidak akan **berubah,** kalau kamu sendiri tidak berusaha **merubahnya.**	e.	Your lot in life will not **change**, if you yourself do not make the effort **to change** it.
f.	**Ubah**lah sikap angkuhmu itu!	f.	**Change** that arrogant manner of yours!
g.	Pakaian yang indah itu **mengubah** dia menjadi seorang wanita yang cantik sekali.	g.	The gorgeous clothes **transformed** her into a very beautiful woman.
h.	'Saya orang kulit bewarna, saya tidak dapat **mengubah /menukar** kulit saya,' katanya.	h.	'I'm a coloured person, I can't **change** the colour of my skin,' she said.

II.G.2. Study the following sentences carefully and note the verb **tukar** and **its derivatives.**

tukar, bertukar, menukar (transitive): to change, exchange, swap.

a.	Dia mau **menukar** namanya.	a.	He wants to **change** his name.
b.	Amat **sedang menukar** ban mobilnya.	b.	Amat **is changing** the tyre of his car.
c.	Anda mau **bertukar tempat** dengan saya?	c.	Do you want **to change** places with me?
d.	Saya harus **menukar** uang dolar ini dengan uang rupiah.	d.	I have to **change** these dollars into rupiahs.
e.	Bunglon adalah binatang yang bisa **bertukar warna.**	e.	A chameleon is an animal that can **change its colour.**
f.	Saya harus **menukar** sepatu saya, karena basah.	f.	I have to **change** my shoes because they are wet.
g.	Cuaca di Canberra sering **ber-tukar-tukar/berubah-(r)ubah.**	g.	The weather in Canberra is **changeable.**
h.	Anda harus pergi ke bank untuk **menukar(kan)** cek itu.	h.	You have to go to the bank to **cash** that cheque.

II.G.1.&.2. Exercises

After studying the **meaning** and the **usage** of the words **tukar, ubah** and **ganti,** complete the following sentences by filling in the blanks or adding the necessary words. Use your imagination!

a. Ban sepeda saya harus **ditukar,** tetapi saya belum ada uang untuk ______________ yang baru.
b. Teman sekelas saya mau **bertukar tempat** ______________ saya, karena katanya penglihatannya kurang baik.
c. Di kota saya banyak nama jalan yang sudah **ditukar**. Nama yang dipakai sekarang ialah nama pahlawan yang ______________.
d. Saya bertemu dengan ______________ lama saya. Sedikit pun dia tidak **berubah**.
e. Sudah banyak **perubahan** di Jakarta sekarang sejak saya ______________ kota itu 10 tahun yang lalu.
f. Apa saya harus **mengganti** ______________ yang dirusakkan anak saya itu?
g. Di sekolah kami hanya ada beberapa buah komputer. Jadi kami harus **berganti-ganti** ______________nya.
h. **Pengganti** guru sejarah belum datang. Jadi siapa akan ______________ sejarah untuk semester ini?

II.H. Homework (Pekerjaan Rumah)

Give the meaning of each of the following words; give the root and list two other of its derivatives. Make a sentence using each of these derivatives so that the meaning is clear. Then give the English equivalent of each sentence.

1. penemu
2. pengganti
3. menghargai
4. penjelmaan
5. membiarkan
6. kesamaran
7. menukar
8. berubah
9. ancaman
10. membina

Contoh (Model)

penemu:	discoverer
temu:	root
bertemu:	Saya **bertemu** dengan teman lama saya tadi pagi **I met** an old friend of mine this morning.
menemukan:	Siapa yang **menemukan** Australia untuk pertama kali? Who **discovered** Australia for the first time?
ditemukan:	Pembunuh itu masih belum **ditemukan**. The murderer still has not **been found** yet.
menemui:	Saya harus **menemui** guru itu besok. I have **to meet (see)** that teacher tomorrow.
pertemuan:	Kami harus mengadakan **pertemuan** dua kali sebulan. We have to hold a **meeting (gathering)** twice a month.

Treat the rest of the words in similar fashion to the model given.

II.I. Mengemukakan buah fikiran secara lisan atau tertulis (Oral and Written Expression)

Adakah orang-orang 'Bunglon' di negeri Anda? Berilah contoh dengan menceritakan sebuah peristiwa, yang panjangnya tidak lebih dari 100 kata.

II.A. English version

CHAMELEON
For 'My Hero'

Bravely you leap, lithely you glide,
Calmly you face 'the tranquil world'
Quite unaware of mortal danger,
Everything in nature provides you with a weapon.

You leap into a clump of bamboo,
Then glide amidst the ripening rice,
Absorbed in play behind the boughs,
There is nothing that can disturb you.

Ugh, you're content indeed with your many colours,
Finding it easy to disguise, simple to transform yourself,
Provided you adapt to your environment.

Dear God, let me live in misery,
Let physical suffering threaten me,
I would not deign to be like that. (i.e. chameleon)

BAB KETIGA

(Chapter III)

III.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)

Bacalah artikel di bawah ini dengan saksama.

BAHASA KESUSASTERAAN

Mengarang, seperti halnya **memahat**[1] dan **melukis**[2] ialah **seni**.[3]

Kalau seorang ahli pahat **mempergunakan**[4] batu atau kayu untuk **mewujudkan**[5] berbagai **bentuk**[6] yang dinamai patung, menurutkan **alam pikiran**nya,[7] seorang pelukis menggunakan cat dan warna untuk melukiskan **bisikan jiwanya**,[8] maka seorang pengarang kesusasteraan memakai bahasa —kata-kata yang dipilihnya disusunnya dengan saksama—untuk **mengungkapkan**[9] pikiran dan perasaan hatinya.

Bahasa bagi pengarang kesusasteraan adalah alat untuk melahirkan **barang apa**[10] yang dirasakan dalam hatinya dan yang dialaminya dalam hidupnya; jika disampaikan kepada orang lain dapat diterima dan dirasakan pula oleh orang-orang lain itu seperti bentuk atau gambaran yang ada dalam hati dan pikiran pengarang **semula**.[11]

Bahasa yang dipakai dalam karangan kesusasteraan amat **berlainan**[12] bentuk dan susunannya dari bahasa yang dipakai dalam pers. Bahasa dalam pers mempunyai **coraknya**[13] sendiri, tidak perlu mempunyai **nilai**[14] kesusasteraan. Bahasa pers bahasa spontan, bahasa yang hidup di **lingkungan**[15] masyarakat, harus **sederhana**,[16] jelas artinya, supaya mudah **dimengerti**.[17]

Biasanya **usia**[18] koran hanya satu hari, begitu dibaca begitu dibuang. **Sedangkan**[19] kesusasteraan, karya berseni, dibaca untuk dinikmati, **dibahas**[20] dan dibandingkan dengan karya lain, karena sastra **mencerminkan**[21] **inti**[22] kehidupan **makhluk**[23] yang **beraneka-ragam**[24] dari hari ke hari dan dari zaman ke zaman.

III.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts.

1. memahat: to sculpt, carve
2. melukis: to paint

3. seni: art
4. mempergunakan: to use, make use of
5. mewujudkan: to create, give a shape, bring into being
6. bentuk: form, shape
7. alam pikiran: mental universe
8. bisikan jiwanya: inner feelings inspiration
9. mengungkapkan: to express
10. barang apa: whatever, anything
11. semula: originally, in the first place
12. berlainan: different from each other
13. coraknya: characteristic, structure, feature
14. nilai: value
15. lingkungan: circle
16. sederhana: simple, plain, straightforward
17. dimengerti: to be understood
18. usia: the life span, age
19. sedangkan: whereas
20. dibahas: to be discussed critically
21. mencerminkan: to reflect
22. inti: core, essence
23. makhluk: (God's) creature
24. beraneka-ragam: all sorts of (ways)

III.C. Comprehension

Setelah mempelajari bacaan III.A. dengan saksama, jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan ini dengan kalimat yang lengkap dalam Bahasa Indonesia.

1. Sebutkanlah beberapa hal yang termasuk seni.
2. Apa(kah) yang dimaksud dengan 'ahli pahat'?
3. Apa(kah) yang digunakan oleh seorang pelukis untuk mewujudkan karyanya?
4. Bentuk dan susunan bahasa yang dipakai dalam pers, berlainan dengan bahasa yang digunakan dalam karangan kesusasteraan. Terangkanlah dengan ringkas.

III.D. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

Perhatikanlah pemakaian **ada** dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut.
(Observe the use of **ada** in the following sentences.)

III.D.1. Ada is sometimes used to express emphasis. **Ada** may be used before a verb to give emphatic stress to the action expressed by the verb. It corresponds to the use of the auxiliary 'do', in emphatic forms in English. Note the **difference** in **meaning** between the following sentences.

a. i. Mengerti? Do you understand? (non emphatic form)
   ii. **Ada** mengerti? **Do** you understand? (emphatic form)

b. i. Saya memberitahukan hal itu kepada yang berwajib.
I informed the authorities about it. (non emphatic form)
ii. Saya **ada** memberitahukan hal itu kepada yang berwajib.
(emphatic form)

III.D.2. Ada may be used before a place phrase to emphasise the location of something or someone. It corresponds to emphatic stress given to the verb'to be' in similar emphatic place phrases in English.

a. i. Surat itu di dalam laci mejamu tadi pagi. (non emphatic form)
ii. Surat itu **ada** di dalam laci mejamu tadi pagi. (emphatic form)
The letter **was** in the drawer of your desk this morning.
(Naturally the context will show whether emphasis is necessary.)

b. i. Ali waktu itu tidak di rumah. (non emphatic form)
ii. Ali waktu itu tidak **ada** di rumah. (emphatic form)
Ali **was** not at home at that time.

III.D.1.&2. Exercises
Perhatikanlah pemakaian **ada** dalam kalimat yang berikut. (Observe the use of 'ada' in the following sentences.) Give the English equivalents of the sentences.

a. Mengapa tidak berteriak minta tolong?
Saya **ada** berteriak-teriak, tetapi tak ada yang datang menolong.
b. Mengapa orang tuamu tidak diberitahu?
Orang tua saya **ada** diberitahu.
c. Mengapa tidak kamu pakai sepatu yang saya belikan?
(Sepatu itu) **ada** saya pakai, kalau saya pergi ke pesta.
d. **Ada**(kah) Anda catat nama-nama orang yang datang?
e. Dia **ada** datang, tetapi hanya untuk sebentar.
f. **Ada** tiga jam aku menunggu di situ.
g. **Ada**(kah) patut kamu berbuat begitu terhadap orang tuamu?
h. **Ada**(kah) memuaskan hasil ujian Anda?
i. **Ada**(kah) Anda katakan kepadanya, bahwa ibunya sakit?
j. Sedikit pun tidak **ada** terpikir oleh saya untuk menceraikan istri saya.

III.E. Adalah/ialah may be used before a noun when one thing is equated with another or is said to be the thing referred to, emphasising the equational relationship.

a. Memahat dan melukis **adalah/ialah** seni.
or: Memahat dan melukis **merupakan** seni.

b. Bahasa bagi pengarang **adalah/ialah** alat untuk melahirkan perasaan dan pikiran.
or: Bahasa bagi pengarang **merupakan** alat untuk melahirkan perasaan dan pikiran.
c. Dia **adalah/ialah** guru saya.
d. Jangan lupa! Saya **adalah** guru.
e. Ini **adalah/ialah** gagasan yang paling baik.

NOTE
i. With a third person (singular or plural) **ialah** and **adalah** may be used interchangeably (see III.E. c.& e.), but with a first and second person (singular or plural) **adalah** is more common. (see III.E. d.)
ii. **Adalah** may not be used to denote the emphasis of 'do' before a verb or 'be' before a place phrase.
iii. In sentences a) & b) **merupakan** may be used in the place of **adalah** to form an equational sentence.

III.E. Exercises

Fill in the blanks in the following sentences with the words **ada, adalah** or **merupakan**. Where both **adalah** and **merupakan** are possible use the latter. Then give the English equivalents of the sentences.

a. Perempuan itu ______________ adik dari nenek saya.
b. Dia ______________ diundang, tetapi kenapa dia tidak datang?
c. Kejadian itu ______________ pengalaman yang tidak dapat saya lupakan.
d. Yang ditanyai polisi ______________ orang-orang yang dicurigai.
e. Surat itu ______________ diterimanya, tetapi belum dibalasnya.
f. Bahasa ______________ alat untuk melahirkan pikiran dan perasaan hati.
g. Dia ______________ pahlawan bangsa.
h. Lukisan itu ______________ gambaran bisikan jiwanya.
i. Apa(kah) dia ______________ makan tadi pagi?
j. Ini ______________ kesempatan yang baik bagi kita.

III.F. Penggunaan Bahasa (Language Usage)

Penggunaan kata dan ungkapan (Use of words and phrases)
Perhatikanlah bentuk dan arti kata-kata yang dicetak tebal dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. Kemudian kuasailah kalimat-kalimat itu.
(Observe carefully the form and the meaning of the words in bold type in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.)

ada: to be, exist, available
berada: well to do, to be
mengadakan: to organise, hold

a.	Dia sudah **ada**. Baru saja datang. Marilah kita mulai.	a.	He is already **here**. He has just arrived. Let us begin.
b.	Menurut keterangan-keterangan yang **ada** sampai sekarang, dia terbukti tidak bersalah.	b.	According to the information **available** so far he has been proved not guilty.
c.	**Ada-ada saja!** Kemarin penamu hilang, sekarang bukumu yang hilang.	c.	**There's always something** (the matter). Yesterday you lost your pen, today you lost your book.
d.	**Ada-ada** saja yang diceritakannya. Pantaslah! Dia tukang pangkas.	d.	**There's always something** for him to relate. Of course, he is a barber.
e.	Hadi anak (se)orang yang **berada**.	e.	Hadi is from **a well to do** family.
f.	Dia harus **berada** di Jakarta paling lambat lusa.	f.	He has **to be** in Jakarta the day after tomorrow at the latest.
g.	Tanggal berapa Saudara bermaksud akan **mengadakan** pertemuan dengan teman-teman sesekolah dulu?	g.	What date do you plan **to organise** a gathering of former schoolmates?
h.	Kita harus **mengadakan** rapat selekas mungkin untuk membicarakan hal itu.	h.	We have **to hold** a meeting as soon as possible to discuss the matter.
i.	Apa tidak akan **diadakan** pesta perpisahan untuk Sdr. Amin? Dia akan berangkat bulan depan.	i.	Isn't there going **to be** a farewell party for Mr. Amin? He is leaving next month.
j.	**Adakalanya**, kalau saya tidak sibuk saya pergi mengunjungi teman.	j.	**There are times**, if I am not busy, that I go to visit my friends.

III.F. Exercises

After studying the meaning and the usage of the word **ada** and its derivatives, complete the following sentences by filling in the blanks or adding the necessary words. Use your imagination!

1. Mobil mewah seperti itu belum **ada** di ______________ .
2. Walaupun dia orang yang **berada**, hidupnya ________________ .
3. Saya tidak bisa ______________ anak saya ke luar negri, karena saya bukan orang yang **berada**.

4. Dia harus berangkat besok naik pesawat, karena dia harus **berada** di Jakarta paling lambat ____________ .
5 Apa(kah) kaum buruh berhak **mengadakan** ____________ di Indonesia?
6. Mereka mahasiswa yang rajin dan bertanggung jawab, tetapi **adakalanya** mereka malas ____________ kuliah.
7 Berapa kali sebulan organisasi itu **mengadakan** ____________ ?
8 Sayang, saya tidak bisa datang ke pesta yang akan **diadakan** oleh ____________ kita.
9. Anak saya banyak. **Ada-ada saja** yang membuat saya ____________ .
10. **Ada-ada saja** yang diminta anak itu. Bulan yang lalu dia minta sepeda. Sekarang dia minta dibelikan ______________ .

III.G. Observe carefully **the form** and **the meaning** of the words in bold type in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.

pakai, memakai: to use, wear
memakaikan: to put something on for someone

a.	**Pakailah** mesin tulis saya, kalau Anda mau mengetik surat itu sekarang.	a.	**Use** my typewriter, if you want to type the letter now.
b.	Kakek saya ke mana pergi, **memakai** tongkat sekarang.	b.	My grandfather **uses** a stick, wherever he goes now.
c.	Tiap kali pergi ke mesjid, Ayah biasanya **memakai** kain sarung dan pici.	c.	Every time Father goes to the mosque, he usually **wears** a sarong and a cap.
d.	Orang itu masih muda, agak gemuk dan **memakai** kacamata.	d.	The person is still young, rather plump and he **is wearing** glasses.
e.	Murid-murid di sekolah itu diharuskan **memakai pakaian seragam**.	e.	The pupils at that school are required **to wear uniforms**.
f.	Tunggu sebentar! Ibu sedang **berpakaian**.	f.	Wait a moment! Mother is **getting dressed**.
g.	Dia selalu rapi **berpakaian**.	g.	She always **dresses** neatly.
h.	Orang yang malas seperti kamu **tidak terpakai** di perusahaan ini.	h.	A lazy person like you **has no place** in this firm (is of no use to this firm).
i.	Dalam musim dingin **pemakaian** listrik meningkat.	i.	In winter electricity **consumption** rises.
j.	Saya **memakaikan** sehelai	j.	**I put on** a tie **for** my son.

dasi **pada** anak saya. Warna dasi itu cocok sekali dengan warna kemejanya.	The colour of the tie goes very well with the colour of his shirt.

III.H. Observe carefully **the form** and **the meaning** of the words in bold type in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.

guna: use, advantage, benefit
berguna: useful, beneficial
menggunakan, mempergunakan: to make use of, utilise, operate

a. Guru menerangkan **guna** daun dan akar bagi tumbuh-tumbuhan.	a. The teacher explained **the use of** leaves and roots for plants.
b. Apa **gunanya** belajar bahasa asing?	b. What is **the benefit/use** of learning a foreign language?
c. Dia anak yang tidak tahu **membalas guna**.	c. He is **ungrateful** child. (He doesn't know how **to repay a kindness.**)
d. Ah, apa **gunanya!**	d. Oh, what is **the use!**
e. Buku-buku seperti itu **berguna** sekali untuk menambah pengertian saya tentang penduduk dan adat-istiadat daerah itu.	e. Books like that are very **useful** for improving my understanding of the inhabitants and traditions of that area.
f. Dalam percakapan sehari-hari, mahasiswa tahun kedua sudah bisa **menggunakan/ memakai** Bahasa Indonesianya.	f. In everyday conversation the second year students are able **to make use** of their Indonesian.
g. Dia **menggunakan** teman-temannya untuk mendapat pekerjaan.	g. He **made use of** his friends to get a job.
h. Apa ini dapat **kaugunakan**?	h. Do you **have any use** for this? or: Can you **make use** of this?
i. Mahasiswa itu tidak hanya pintar, dia juga **mempergunakan** waktunya dengan baik.	i. The student is not only intelligent, he also **makes good use** of his time.
j. Bagaimana caranya Saudara akan **mempergunakan** uang itu?	j. In what way are you going **to make use** of that money?

k.	Dewasa ini banyak sekali terdapat **penggunaan/ pemakaian** kata-kata Inggris di surat-surat kabar Bahasa Indonesia.	k.	These days you'll find a widespread **use (usage)** of English words in the Indonesian newspapers.

III.G.&H. Exercises

After studying the meaning of the words **pakai** and **guna** and their derivatives, join the following sentences using the word **yang** according to the models given. Begin the sentences with the word(s) in bold.

Model: i. **Dia** menggunakan pisau dapur untuk memotong tali itu.
Pisau itu terletak di atas meja makan.
Dia menggunakan pisau dapur, **yang** terletak di atas meja makan untuk memotong tali itu.

ii. **Orang** itu guru saya. Dia memakai kacamata.
Orang yang memakai kacamata itu guru saya.

1. Saya memakai **mobil**. Mobil itu punya paman saya.
2. **Pisau itu** tajam sekali. Ibu menggunakan pisau itu untuk memotong roti.
3. Bambang memakai **sepatu baru**. Sepatu itu adalah hadiah dari ayahnya.
4. Pemuda itu memakai **kemeja batik**. Kemeja itu ialah oleh-oleh dari Yogyakarta.
5. **Orang** itu rapi berpakaian. Dia adalah anggota Angkatan Udara.
6. Mereka menggunakan **bahasa Jawa** di rumah. Mereka tidak menggunakan Bahasa Indonesia.
7. **Anak-anak** itu murid SMP. Mereka memakai pakaian seragam.
8. Bu Joko memelihara **Hamid** sejak dari kecil. Hamid tidak tahu mambalas guna.
9. Rumah sakit itu menggunakan **alat-alat modern**. Alat-alat itu didatangkan dari Jerman.
10. **Buku-buku** itu tidak berguna lagi baginya. Dia akan menjual buku-buku itu.

III.I. Latihan Terjemahan (Translation Exercise)

Translate the following poem into English. Consult the dictionary for unfamiliar words. Compare your translation with the English version at the end of the chapter after you have finished.

LALAT-LALAT

Jaman sekarang jaman lalat
ke mana-mana (pergi) banyak lalat
ini lalat
itu lalat
di sini lalat di situ lalat

Di mana-mana penuh lalat
macam-macam bentuk lalat
macam-macam sifat lalat
lalat kuning
lalat biru
lalat coklat
lalat merah
lalat hitam
lalat hijau
lalat hijau
lalat hijau
semua pantas
semua tegas
semua keras
semua ganas
semua ganas
semua ganas

Jaman sekarang jaman lalat
ke mana-mana (pergi) banyak lalat
di kampung lalat
di kota lalat
di gedung lalat
di kursi lalat
di dalam lalat
di luar lalat
di kampus lalat
di masjid lalat
Jaman sekarang jaman lalat
ke mana-mana banyak lalat
ke mana saja banyak lalat
ke mana saja banyak wabah
wabah
wabah
wabah
wabah
wabaaaaaaaah

Dikutip dari 'Sinar Harapan'
Sabtu 22 April 1978
oleh Djarot Soedarso

Notes: The poem 'Lalat-lalat' was written by Djarot Soedarso during the period of student unrest before the re-election of Soeharto as President in March 1978.
It appears to be political criticism by innuendo. 'Lalat hijau' refers indirectly to the military in their green uniforms and 'lalat merah' to the communists and 'lalat kuning' to the colour of the students' jackets.

III.J. Meluaskan Kosa Kata (Vocabulary Expansion)
Give a word (words) that you associate with each of the following.
For example the author of the poem associates the word **lalat** with different things. **Lalat hijau** (green flies) probably refers to the army (with its green uniforms); **lalat merah** (red flies) with the communists. Others, however, might associate **lalat** with rubbish bins (**tong sampah**) or disease (**penyakit**).
The idea of this exercise is to enrich your vocabulary and give confidence in the use of words through a kind of game. Now do the exercise!

1. ganas, ______________________________
2. merah, ______________________________
3. hitam, ______________________________
4. kampus, ______________________________
5. mesjid or masjid, ______________________________
6. wabah, ______________________________
7. patung, ______________________________
8. pelukis, ______________________________
9. seni, ______________________________
10. pahlawan, ______________________________

III.A. English Version

LITERARY LANGUAGE

Writing, like painting and sculpture, is an art.

If a sculptor follows his inspiration in utilising stone or wood to create various shapes called statues, if a painter uses paints and colours to portray his inner feelings, then an author uses language—words he chooses and arranges with care—to express his thoughts and emotions.

For an author of a literary work, language is a tool with which to express whatever he feels in his heart and what he has experienced during his life; if this is conveyed to other people, they can also accept it and feel it in the same form or visualisation that originally existed in the heart and thoughts of the author.

Language used in works of literature is very different in form and structure from language which is used in the press. Language in the media has its own characteristics. It need not possess literary value. Newspaper language is spontaneous, language which is current in society. It must be straightforward, should be clear, so that it can be easily understood.

Usually the life span of a newspaper is only a day. Once read, it is thrown away. Whereas literature, work of art, is read to be enjoyed, critically discussed and compared with other works, because literature reflects the essence of the wide variety of human life from day to day and from era to era.

III.I. English version

FLIES

Now is the season for flies
Wherever we go there are flies
These are flies
Those are flies
Here are flies and there are flies

Everywhere is full of flies
Flies of all shapes
Flies of all types
yellow flies
blue flies
brown flies
red flies
black flies
green flies
green flies
green flies
All of them proper
All of them firm
All of them hard
All of them fierce
All of them fierce
All of them fierce

Now is the season for flies
Wherever we go there are flies
flies in the villages
flies in the cities
flies in the buildings
flies on the seats
flies inside
flies outside
flies on the campus
flies in the mosque

Now is the season of flies
Wherever we go there are flies
No matter where there are flies
The plague is everywhere
plague
plague
plague
plague
p-l-a-g-u-e

BAB KEEMPAT

(Chapter IV)

IV.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)

Bacalah pelajaran yang di bawah ini dengan saksama. (Read the lesson below carefully.)

KERING

Kering. **Ladang-ladang**[1] telah jadi **dataran**[2] tanah retak.

Dia jalan terus. **Bayang**[3] tubuhnya yang **jangkung**[4] menari-nari lebih jangkung lagi atas **garis-garis**[5] retak itu. Seperti lukisan abstrak saja: seorang **gaib**,[6] tubuhnya dipotong-potong menari-nari di **bumi**[7] yang juga terpotong-potong.

Matahari **lohor**[8] tak kenal **ampun**[9]. **Teriknya**[10] **melecut**[11] langit. **Embun**[12] **segumpal**[13] tak ada. Udara **bergetar.**[14] Di sana-sini ia **beruap.**[15] **Berkepul-kepul**,[16] dekat ke permukaan tanah.

Dia sampai di **mata air**[17] kecil, sedikit **di balik**[18] **bukit**[19] kecil, **batas**[20] utara ladangnya.

Kering! Mata air kecil ini pun akhirnya kering juga. Masih terusnya ia hingga kemarin memberi air, baginya, bagi tani-tani lainnya **sekitar**[21] situ merupakan keajaiban sendiri. Mata air lainnya sudah lama **berkeringan**,[22] menjadi lobang-lobang kecil, berlumpur kering, **berkeping-keping**.[23]

Sempat[24] mata air kecil ini jadi semacam **permainan bertaruh**[25] bagi mereka: Kering, atau tidak kering, esok paginya? Esoknya, pagi-pagi benar, mereka lari ke sana, untuk menemuinya masih saja berair. Gembiralah mereka yang menang bertaruh. Sedang yang **kalah,**[26] juga ikut gembira, air bagi mereka masih ada!

Tapi, kali ini, mereka tak gembira. Yang telah datang duluan ke mata air itu pagi tadi, menyatakan sedih dan kecewanya tanpa **tedeng aling-aling**.[27] **Ceret-ceret**,[28] **lodong-lodong bambu**,[29] **kaleng-kaleng**,[30] **panci-panci**[31] **dilempar berserakan**[32] sekitarnya.

Sebuah **tongkat**[33] besar dari kayu, yang **ditancapkan**[34] dalam **bekas**[35] lobang mata air itu, bercerita tentang **usaha sia-sia**[36] mereka **merongrong**[37] air dari situ. Bercerita tentang tak **percayanya**[38] mereka, tentang **putus asanya**[39] mereka....

Dia mengangguk-angguk. Angguk-angguk, yang mencoba **menjalin**[40] tongkat kayu, ceret-ceret, lodong-lodong bambu, **teko-teko**[41] dan lain-lain,

yang **bergeletakan**[42] di situ dengan lumpur-lumpur kering, dataran retak-retak bekas ladang-ladang itu, dalam satu **pertautan**[43] yang logis: Kemarau. Kemarau, yang tahun ini benar-benar **kelewat**[44] **larut**.[45]

dikutip dari 'Kering'
oleh Iwan Simatupang

Cultural Note

All the containers like kettles, bamboo tubes, etc. are for fetching water from the spring for drinking or for cooking purposes.

It is interesting to note that each region has its own particular kind of water container. In the story above it is a piece of a large hollow bamboo trunk and it is carried on the shoulder. But in other regions beautiful locally made pottery vessels are often used. They are carried balanced on the head.

IV.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts.

1. ladang-ladang: unirrigated fields, farmland
2. dataran: flat level ground, plain
3. bayangan: shadow, image
4. jangkung: tall, lanky
5. garis: line; garis-garis retak: the lines of cracks.
6. gaib: mysterious, magical
7. bumi: earth
8. lohor: noon, midday
9. ampun: mercy
10. terik: the heat (of the sun)
11. melecut: to whip, flog; melecut (langit): to beat down
12. embun: dew
13. segumpal: a clot, a lump, here means a drop (not commonly used for dew, which should b setitik)
14. bergetar: to vibrate, shaking, shimmering
15. beruap: steaming, to form a haze
16. berkepul-kepul: billowing, eddying
17. mata air: spring (of water)
18. di balik: the other side of
19. bukit: hill
20. batas: boundary, border, limit
21. sekitar: around
22. berkeringan: to dry up
23. berkeping-keping: to be in pieces, fragments
24. sempat: to have time, to take the opportunity, chance
25. bertaruh: to gamble, bet ; permainan bertaruh: a gambling game; menang bertaruh: to win at gambling
26. kalah: to lose, to be defeated, be beaten
27. tedeng: screen, protection; tedeng aling-aling: to hide, seek cover; tanpa tedeng aling-aling: openly, without inhibitions
28. ceret : kettle

29. lodong-lodong bambu: large bamboo tubes (water container)
30. kaleng: can of any kind, tin
31. panci: pan
32. dilempar: to be thrown, cast, tossed; berserakan: to bescattered, spread; dilempar berserakan: lay, scattered around
33. tongkat: stick
34. ditancapkan: inserted, embedded, plunged
35. bekas: former
36. usaha sia-sia: vain, futile or fruitless effort
37. merongrong: to entice, dig out, gnaw
38. tak percayanya: their disbelief
39. putus asanya: their despair
40. menjalin: to plait, connect, draw together
41. teko: tea-pot
42. menggeletak: to sprawl; bergeletakan: scattered (of bodies and not commonly used of things)
43. bertaut: to join; pertautan: association. (concept)
44. kelewat: very, exceedingly
45. larut: long (of duration): kelewat larut: to drag endlessly

IV.C. Comprehension

Jawablah pertanyaan di bawah ini dengan kalimat yang **lengkap** dalam Bahasa Indonesia. (Answer the questions below in Indonesian with full sentences.)

1. Apa penghidupan tokoh dalam cerita ini?
2. Bagaimana bentuk bayang-bayang tubuhnya di tanah retak?
3. Dia berjalan menuju ke mana pada hari panas itu?
4. Di mana mata air, batas utara ladangnya itu terletak?
5. Bagaimana mata air itu ditemuinya ketika dia sampai di sana? Masih berairkah?
6. Bagaimana mata air lainnya?
7. Dari kalimat mana Anda tahu bahwa tokoh itu tidak sendiri hidup di daerah yang mengalami kekeringan itu?
8. Untuk apa petani-petani itu bertaruh?
9. Bagaimana perasaan mereka setelah usaha mereka untuk memperoleh air ternyata sia-sia?
10. Kenapa ceret-ceret, lodong-lodong bambu, kaleng-kaleng, panci-panci dilemparkan mereka di sekitar mata air yang sudah kering itu?

IV.D. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

1. Note the meaning of the verbs **ber- + root + -an** in the following sentences.

	Indonesian		English
a.	Hadi dan Dewi **berpegangan** tangan.	a.	Hadi and Dewi **are holding** hands.
b.	Tuan rumah dan tamu **berjabatan tangan.**	b.	The host and the guest **shook hands**.
c.	Nyonya rumah dan tamu **bersalaman**.	c.	The hostess and the guest **greeted each other.**
d.	Saya tidak tahu bahwa Ratna dan Bambang **bermusuhan**.	d.	I didn't know that Ratna and Bambang **were enemies.**
e.	Dia selalu **bertentangan** dengan orang tuanya.	e.	He is always **in conflict** with his parents.
f.	Yang dikatakannya dalam rapat **berlawanan/bertentangan** dengan prinsipnya.	f.	What he said in the meeting **was in conflict** with his principles.
g.	Ali dan Udin **bersaingan**.	g.	Ali and Udin **are rivals**.
h.	Restoran 'Garuda' dan 'Selamat Makan' **bersaingan**.	h.	'Garuda' restaurant and 'Selamat Makan' are **competitors**.
i.	Sudah lama(kah) mereka **berkenalan**?	i.	Have they **known each other** long?
j.	Tahukah Anda bahwa sekarang kita tinggal **berdekatan**?	j.	Do you know that we now live **close to each other**?
k.	Sayang, kami tinggal **berjauhan** sekarang.	k.	Unfortunately, we now live **far apart (from each other).**
l.	Hari lahirnya tahun ini **bertepatan** dengan 'Lebaran'.	l.	Her birthday this year **coincides** with 'Lebaran'.

IV.D.1. Remarks

Ber- + root + -an here indicates reciprocity, inter-relationship, or two things having something in common with each other.

IV.D.2. Note the meaning of the verbs (**ber- + root + -an**) in the following sentences.

	Indonesian		English
a.	Orang **berdatangan** untuk berobat ke sana.	a	People **came from all around** for medical treatment there.
b.	Rumah liar **bermunculan** di daerah itu.	b	Unauthorised houses **sprung up** in that area.

c.	Mata air lainnya sudah lama **berkeringan**.	c.	The other springs **had dried up** long ago.
d.	Ceret-ceret, lodong-lodong bambu, teko-teko dan lain-lain dilempar **berserakan** di sekitar mata air itu.	d.	Kettles, bamboo water containers, tea pots and other things were **strewn about** around that spring.
e.	Bunga di kebun yang **berkembangan** semerbak baunya.	e.	The flowers **blooming** in the garden have a fragrant scent.
f.	Ketika kapal itu terbakar penumpang **berlompat-an/beterjunan** ke laut.	f.	When the boat caught fire passengers **jumped/dived** into the sea.
g.	Di daerah itu banyak kangu-ru **berkeliaran**.	g.	In that area there are many kangaroos **running wild**.
h.	Air matanya **bercucuran** mendengar kabar yang sedih itu.	h.	Her tears **poured down** on hearing that sad news.

IV.D.2. Remarks:

The **ber- + root + -an** verb here indicates that the **subject** of the sentence is **plural** and **adds** the meaning of **randomness** (the actions occur in no particular sequence).

IV.D.3. Note the meaning of the verb **ber- + reduplicated root + -an** in the following sentences.

a.	Mereka sudah lama **berkirim-kiriman surat**.	a.	They have been **writing to each other** for a long time.
b.	Dari jauh terdengar ayam **berkokok bersahut-sahutan**.	b.	From a long way off the cocks could be heard **crowing one after the other**.
c.	Walaupun mereka sudah ber-tahun-tahun kawin, mereka masih **berkasih-kasihan**.	c.	Although they have been married for years, they **are** still **loving toward each other**.
d.	Mereka masih **bertembak-tembakan**.	d.	They are still **firing at each other**.
e.	Penduduk di desa itu ramah, dan mereka sering **berto-long-tolongan**. Itulah yang disebutkan 'gotong royong'.	e.	The people of that village are friendly and they often **help one another**. That is what is called 'mutual co-operation'.

f. Di dalam pilem itu banyak adegan **berpeluk-pelukan** dan **bercium-ciuman**.

f. In that film there are many scenes of **embracing and kissing.**

g. Murid-murid **berkejar-kejaran** di halaman sekolah.

g. The pupils **are chasing each** other on the school ground.

IV.D.3. Remarks:

Here **ber- + reduplicated root + -an** verb has the meaning of reciprocity and suggests that the action is being done repeatedly or continuously.

IV.D.1, 2 & 3. Exercises

Give the Indonesian equivalents of the following sentences using the **ber- + root + -an** or **ber- + reduplicated root + an** verbs as the case may be.

a. There are a lot of bandits at large in the city.
b. Most of the people who jumped from **the capsized boat** (kapal yang terbalik) into the river could not swim.
c. What is the name of the flowers in bloom?
d. Because of the long dry spell the rivers have dried up.
e. Look at the empty cans and broken bottles which are scattered about on the beach.
f. They embraced each other for a very long time at the door.
g. The blood poured from the nose and head of the **seriously wounded man** (orang yang luka parah).
h. Every night in that area could be heard the sound of soldiers and their enemies firing at each other.
i. The children are playing in the bedroom and they are hitting each other with a pillow.
j. Did you see them kiss each other?

IV.E. Penggunaan Bahasa (Language Usage)

Penggunaan kata dan ungkapan (Use of words and phrases)

Perhatikanlah bentuk dan arti kata-kata yang dicetak tebal dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut . Kemudian kuasailah kalimat-kalimat itu.

(Observe carefully the form and the meaning of the words in bold type in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.)

IV.E.1. retak: crack, cracked

a. Janganlah pakai piring-piring yang sudah **retak** itu.

a. Don't use those plates which already **cracked**.

b. **Retak-retak** di dinding itu disebabkan apa?

b. What caused those **cracks in the** walls?

c. Terik matahari merusakkan cat dinding, pintu dan jendela dan **meretakkan** genteng.

c. The heat of the sun ruined the paint on the walls, doors and windows and **cracked** the tiles on the roof.

d. **Keretakan** pada dinding gedung itu sudah melebar.

d. **The crack** in the wall of that building was widened.

e. Perbuatanmu akan **meretak-kan** kasih sayangnya dan kepercayaannya terhadapmu.

e. What you have done is going to **damage** his deep love for you and his trust in you.

f. Sudah lama kelihatan adanya **keretakan** dalam rumah tangga itu.

f. The **rift** in that household has long been apparent.

IV.E.2. patah: broken. It is also used as a **classifier** for the word **'kata'.**

a. Anda ada pinsil? Boleh saya pinjam? Pinsil saya **patah**.

a. Have you a pencil? May I borrow it? My pencil is **broken.**

b. Kasihan, Hadi! Kakinya **patah**, ketika dia main sepak bola.

b. Poor Hadi! His leg was **broken** when he was playing football.

c. Dia (sudah) **patah hati**.

c. He is **broken hearted.**

d. **Patah selera saya** melihat makanan itu.

d. **I lost my appetite** on seeing that food.

e. Siapa yang **mematahkan** tongkat ini?

e. Who **broke** this stick?

f. Saya tidak mau **mematah-kan** semangatnya.

f. I don't want **to dampen** his enthusiasm.

g. Sekarang kami persilakan Bapak Harun untuk mengu-capkan **beberapa patah kata** untuk membuka acara malam ini.

g. Now we invite Mr. Harun to say **a few words** to open this evening's program.

IV.E.3. putus: broken, snap

a. Tali itu hampir **putus**.

a. The rope is almost **broken**.

b. Saya takut, kalau tali tempat dia bergantung itu **putus**, dia akan jatuh ke dalam sungai.

b. I am afraid if the rope he is holding onto should **snap**, he'll fall into the river.

c.	Perhubungan kereta api dari sini ke Bandung **putus** buat beberapa hari.	c.	The rail connection from here to Bandung **has been broken** for several days.
d.	Saya sudah **putus asa**.	d.	I have **given up hope**.
e.	Janganlah **(ber)putus asa**!	e.	Don't **give up hope**!
f.	Bambang **memutuskan** pertunangannya dengan Irawati.	f.	Bambang **broke off** his engagement to Irawati.
g.	Sesudah kejadian itu, **putus-lah** tali persahabatan mereka.	g.	After that event their tie of friendship **was severed**.
h.	Dengan suara **(ter)putus-putus** dia berkata, 'Untuk apa hidup?'	h.	In a **broken** voice she said, 'What is there to live for?'

IV.E.4. pecah: broken

a.	Di mana gelas yang **pecah** itu?	a.	Where is that broken glass?
b.	Kaca pintu mobil saya **pecah.**	b.	The (glass door) window of my car is **broken**.
c.	Berapa buah telur yang **pecah**?	c.	How many eggs are **broken**?
d.	Kami duduk bersantai-santai sambil melihat ombak **me-mecah** ke pantai.	d.	We sit and relax while we watch the waves **breaking** on the shore.
e.	Bukan anak saya yang **memecahkan** gelas itu.	e.	It wasn't my child who **broke** that glass.
f.	Kenapa bibir saya **pecah-pecah**? Mungkin karena ke-kurangan vitamin?	f.	Why are my lips **cracked**? Is it possible that it is because of a vitamin deficiency?
g.	Kakinya luka kena **pecahan** kaca.	g.	His foot was cut by a piece of **broken** glass.
h.	Kalau kita **pecah-belah** mu-suh akan dapat menguasai kita dengan mudah.	h.	If we are **disunited** the enemy will easily overrun us.
i.	Siapa presiden Amerika ketika Perang Dunia ke II **pecah**?	i.	Who was the president of America when World War II **broke out**?
j.	Apa yang menyebabkan **perpecahan** di kalangan rakyat?	j.	What caused the **disunity/split** in the community?

IV.E.1,2,3,&4. Exercises

Insert the correct form of the words in brackets (**patah, pecah, retak, putus**) in the following sentences, then translate the completed sentences into English.

a. Gelas itu kemudian _____________ karena diisi oleh Udin dengan air yang mendidih.
b. Apa yang menyebabkan _____________ dalam keluarga yang selama ini rukun dan damai?
c. Bungkuslah barang-barang yang mudah _____________ itu baik-baik sebelum dikirim.
d. Tali itu tiba-tiba _____________ karena tidak begitu kuat.
e. Dia tidak bisa main tenis sekarang, karena tangannya _____________, ketika dia jatuh di kamar mandi.
f. Saya belum _____________ asa. Saya mau mencoba sekali lagi.
g. Apa sebab Ratna _____________ perhubungannya dengan pacarnya?
h. Dia kelihatan _____________ hati, tidak mau lagi bergaul dan bepergian dengan teman-temannya seperti dulu.
i. Walaupun rumah itu baru, tetapi dindingnya sudah banyak yang _____________.
j. Dia makan seperti orang _____________ selera. Kenapa? Sakitkah dia?

IV.F. Mengemukakan buah fikiran secara lisan maupun tertulis. (Oral and Written Expression)

Dengan memakai kata-kata dan susunan kalimat Anda sendiri, siapkanlah sebuah karangan yang panjangnya tidak lebih dari 150 kata. (Using your own words and phrases, prepare a composition of not more than 150 words.)

Misalnya: Kemarau

Ceritakanlah sedikit tentang tokoh yang gaib yang diperkenalkan pada permulaan dalam pelajaran di atas. Gambarkan keadaan bekas ladang-ladang, mata air akibat dari keganasan cuaca di musim kemarau yang kelewat panjang itu. Bayangkanlah pula kesedihan, kekecewaan petani-petani melihat keringnya mata air di sekitar daerah mereka dan putus asa mereka setelah semua usaha untuk memperoleh air sia-sia belaka.

IV.G. Language appreciation

Study the following verses carefully and note their phrases and the style. Then read them aloud with feeling.

They are the lyrics to a popular song and are a useful example of this kind of 'pop art'. Because of its environmental content, this particular song received recognition from the Indonesian government, in the form of a formal letter of commendation and a prize of 100.000 rupiahs

KEMARAU

Panas nian kemarau ini!
Rumput-rumput pun merintih sedih
Rebah tak berdaya di terik sang Surya
Bagaikan dalam neraka.
Curah hujan yang dinanti-nanti
Tiada juga datang menitik
Kering dan gersang menerpa bumi
Yang panas bagai dalam neraka.
Mengapa, mengapa hutanku hilang
Dan tak pernah tumbuh lagi?

Dikutip dari 'Sinar Harapan'
Sabtu,30 Juni 1979
oleh Julius Frans Tekol.

IV.A. English Version

DROUGHT

It was dry. The fields had become flat cracked plains.

He continued walking. His lanky body cast an even lankier shadow, which danced over lines of cracks. Like an abstract painting: A mysterious figure, it danced fragmented over the earth which was also fragmented.

The midday sun was merciless. Its heat beat down. There was not one drop of moisture. The air shimmered. Here and there it formed a haze. Eddying, close to the surface of the earth.

He reached the little spring, just the other side of a small hill, the northern boundary of his fields.

It had dried up. So at last this little spring too had dried up. Right up to yesterday it had given water, for him— for the other farmers round about — which was in itself a miracle. The other springs had long since dried up, turning into little hollows containing fragments of dried mud.

That little spring gave them a chance for a betting game: would it have dried up or not the following morning? Then the next day, very early, they would run there, to discover that it was still flowing. Those who had won their bet rejoiced. And those who had lost, joined in the rejoicing too. There was still water for them!

But this time none of them rejoiced. Those who reached the spring first that morning, had expressed their sorrow and disappointment without inhibitions. Kettles, bamboo water containers, tins and pans had been thrown down and lay scattered around it.

A stout wooden post plunged in the former source of the spring testified to their vain efforts to dig out some water from it. It told the story of their disbelief, of their despair....

He nodded his head. A gesture that attempted to draw together the post, the kettles, the bamboo water-carriers, teapots and the like, strewn about there, together with the fragments of dried mud, and the cracked plains which had once been rice fields, into one logical concept: drought. The drought, that this year was dragging endlessly on.

IV.G. English Version

DROUGHT

How hot is this dry season!
Even the blades of grass sigh with grief
then fall listless in the heat of the sun
as though in hell.

The downpour of rain so longed for
still doesn't come, not a drop,
drought and barrenness assault the earth
the heat is like the heat in hell.

Why, why has my forest gone
never to grow again?

BAB KELIMA

(Chapter V)

V.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)

Bacalah pelajaran yang di bawah ini dengan saksama. (Read the lesson below carefully.)

DUA DUNIA

Dulu rambutnya tidak **jarang**[1] seperti ini. Kalau bersisir sekarang dia harus **perlahan**[2] sekali, sakit rasanya sisir itu **menyentuh**[3] kulit kepalanya. Dan juga dengan perlahan dia menyisir rambutnya itu dia berharap supaya tak banyak yang **rontok.**[4] Terlalu banyak yang hilang segala kepunyaannya yang dulu, sebelum dia kena (penyakit) **tipus**.[5] Ya, terlalu banyak yang hilang. **Kesegarannya,**[6] **kesigapannya,**[7] waktu dan **tenaga kesanggupannya,**[8] begitu mudah **ditelan**[9] oleh ribuan **kuman**[10] yang **menggerogoti**[11] kesehatannya. Dan rambutnya ini, ah alangkah **sakit hatinya,**[12] jika melihat **perhiasan**[13] **satu-satunya**[14] yang asli ada di tubuhnya itu, kini **tak seindah**[15] dulu. Disisirnya perlahan **memanjang**.[16] Jarang dan **kasar**.[17] Tak lagi **mengkilat**.[18] Dia tak mau memberinya minyak, karena minyak dianggapnya akan **membikin**[19] rambut itu sedikit kelihatannya. Dan dia tak mau rambutnya sedikit, tak mau rambutnya itu kelihatan sedikit oleh orang lain.

Meskipun dengan ini dia **menipu hatinya sendiri,**[20] dia **membujuk perasaannya sendiri**[21] yang mengatakan bahwa dia masih cukup bisa **berhias**[22] dengan rambut itu. **Lembut**[23] dan hati-hati **dibelainya**[24] rambutnya sekali lagi **untuk kesekian kalinya.**[25] **Dipandangnya**[26] sebentar mukanya dalam **cermin.**[27]

Ah, tidak! **Tak sampai hati**[28] dia **merenungi**[29] **wajah**[30] itu. **Redup**[31] dan **kuyu**[32] benar sinar matanya. Terlalu **tajam**[33] **beda**[34] dia yang dulu, yang segar dan selalu **lincah**[35]**pandang matanya,**[36] dengan dia yang sekarang ini, yang ada dalam cermin itu. Dia yang sekarang sudah **tak lengkap**[37] lagi dengan keseluruhannya yang dulu, sudah dimakan penyakit. Sudah menjadi **sarang**[38] dari ribuan kuman, yang tak disedarinya telah **merampas**[39] sebagian kepunyaannya.

Dia masih ingat dulu, waktu kecil, bagaimana takutnya dia pada **jarum suntikan.**[40] Dia ingat pula ibunya. Dulu selalu dengan ibunya dia kalau disuntik. **Didekap**[41] dia oleh ibunya dengan **mesra,**[42] **sambil di-**

bisikkannya[43] **bujukan-bujukan**[44] ke telinganya. Dan masih ingat pula dia dulu bagaimana dia lari pulang dari sekolah, karena ada suntikan di sekolahnya itu. Dan ingat pula dia **betapa**[45] ibunya memeluknya dengan mesra, **menginsafkannya**[46] apa perlunya orang disuntik.

Dia tak akan bisa kuat benar seperti dulu. Segala yang dia makan harus ada batasannya, banyak serta **jenisnya**.[47] Betapa **terikatnya**[48] kini dia. **Satu paksaan, di samping kehilangannya akan keseluruhan yang dulu.**[49] Seakan-akan dia tak akan lagi bisa memberi arti hidupnya sendiri. Hidup yang dulu selalu **ditimbang**,[50] **diidamkan**[51] oleh ibunya: **jadilah manusia yang berarti bagi keluargamu!**[52] Idaman ibunya, ucapan ibunya, manusia yang kini sudah tak hadir dalam perjalanannya di hidup ini.

NH.DINI

V.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts. Please familiarise yourself with the words in this list before reading the text.

1. jarang: wide apart, sparse, thin (of hair)
2. lahan, perlahan: slowly, gently
3. menyentuh: to touch lightly
4. rontok: to fall out
5. tipus: typhus, typhoid
6. kesegaran: freshness, invigoration
5. kesigapan: agility, skill
8. tenaga kesanggupannya: her physical capability/strength
9. ditelan: swallowed, gulped, consumed
10. kuman: bacteria, microbe, germ
11. menggerogoti: to erode, eat away, devour
12. sakit hati: resentful, to feel bitter
13. (per)hiasan: adornment, decoration
14. satu-satunya: sole, only; perhiasan satu-satunya yang asli: her sole natural adornment
15. tak seindah: not as beautiful
16. memanjang: to stretch lengthwise, to the very end (of hair)
17. kasar: coarse
18. mengkilat: to shine, shone
19. membikin: to make
20. menipu hatinya sendiri: to deceive herself, fool herself
21. membujuk perasaannya sendiri: to soothe her own feelings, cheer herself up, console herself
22. berhias: to dress oneself up; masih cukup bisa berhias dengan rambut itu: still sufficient to do something attractive with the hair
23. lembut: soft(ly), gently

24. dibelainya: she stroked, caressed
25. untuk kesekian kalinya: for the umpteenth time, for the thousandth time
26. dipandangnya: she glanced at
27. cermin: mirror
28. tak sampai hati: do not have the heart, cannot bear
29. merenungi: to gaze at, look at
30. wajah: face, countenance
31. redup: dim
32. kuyu: lifeless, faded
33. tajam: sharp
34. beda: contrast, difference; terlalu tajam beda dia yang dulu: too sharp a contrast with what she was before
35. lincah: lively
36. pandang matanya: expression in her eyes
37. tak lengkap: incomplete
38. sarang: nest, refuge, haunt
39. merampas: to rob, plunder
40. jarum suntikan: a vaccination needle
41. didekap: clasped, embraced, hugged
42. mesra: fondly
43. sambil dibisikkannya: while whispering
44. bujukan-bujukan: gentle words of coaxing/encouragement
45. betapa: how
46. menginsafkannya: to make her realise, convince
47. jenis: sort, kind, type; banyak serta jenisnya: the amount and kind
48. terikat: restricted
49. satu paksaan, di samping kehilangannya akan keseluruhan yang dulu: something she was forced to do in addition to suffering the loss of part of her former self
50. ditimbang: being weighed, evaluated, calculated, planned for
51. diidamkan: wished for, longed for
52. jadilah manusia yang berarti bagi keluargamu: be a person of value to your family, be someone who means something to your family

V.C. Comprehension

Sesudah mempelajari bacaan V.A. jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan yang berikut dengan kalimat yang lengkap dalam Bahasa Indonesia. (After studying V.A. answer the following questions with complete sentences in Indonesian.)

1. Apakah yang dianggap tokoh dalam cerita ini satu-satunya perhiasan yang indah yang dimilikinya sebelum dia sakit? Terangkanlah dengan singkat!

2. Apa sebabnya dia harus perlahan sekali, kalau menyisir rambutnya? Terangkan pulalah dengan pendek!
3. Apa(kah) sebab dia tidak mau meminyaki rambutnya itu?
4. Apa akibat lain dari penyakitnya itu yang kelihatan olehnya ketika dia merenungi wajahnya di cermin?
5. Waktu kecil tokoh dalam cerita ini takut akan apa? Berilah contoh!
6. Ada(kah) kemungkinan untuk dia bisa kuat kembali seperti dulu?
7. Apa(kah) dia dibolehkan makan apa saja?
8. Kalimat mana yang mengatakan bahwa ibunya sudah meninggal?

V.D. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

Perhatikanlah dengan teliti kata kerja (**me- + kata dasar**) dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut dan pahamkan artinya. (Observe carefully **me- + root** verbs in the following sentences and note their meanings.)

a. Rambutnya tak lagi **mengkilat**. (kilat: gleam, lustre; mengkilat: to shine)
a. Her hair no longer **shone** or: Her hair had lost its lustre.

b. Perutnya terus **membesar**. Dua bulan lagi dia akan melahirkan. (besar: big; membesar: to grow bigger)
b. Her stomach steadily **grew bigger**. In two more months she would give birth.

c. Kapal itu makin **mengecil** kemudian **menghilang** di kejauhan. (kecil: small; mengecil: to grow smaller) (hilang: lost; menghilang: to go out of sight, disappear)
c. The ship **grew smaller** and **disappeared** in the distance.

d. 'Jawablah, jangan **membisu** terus,' kata Ratna kepada Hadi. (bisu: mute; membisu: to act as a mute)
d. 'Answer, don't **stay dumb**,' said Ratna to Hadi.

e. Alangkah senangnya hati kami melihat padi di sawah sudah **menguning**. (kuning: yellow; menguning: to turn yellow)
e. How happy we were to see the rice in the field **turning yellow.**

f. Rambut Ibu sudah mulai **memutih** dan mukanya sudah berkerunyut. (putih: white; memutih: to turn white)
f. Mother's hair has begun **to turn (white) grey** and her face is wrinkled.

g. Malam itu angin kencang dan gelombang **menggunung** tingginya. (gunung: mountain; menggunung: to become mountain-like in size, appearance, etc.)
g. That night the wind was violent and the waves became as high **as mountains.**

h. Saya harus berkebun besok, karena tanaman (hias) di keliling rumah saya sudah **menyemak**. (semak: uncultivated growth; menyemak: to be like uncultivated growth)
h. I have to work in the garden tomorrow, because the plants around the house are **overgrown (growing wild).**

i. Orang **menyemut** ke tanah lapang itu menonton sepak bola. (semut: ant; menyemut: to swarm like ants)
i. The people **swarmed** into the ground to watch the football match.

j. Ketika melihat tentara datang, orang-orang di jalan cepat-cepat **menepi**. (tepi: side, edge; menepi: to move to the side)
j. When they saw the soldiers coming, the people on the street quickly **moved aside**.

V.D. Remarks

Me- + adjective or noun root, forms verbs. It indicates that the subject is in the process of becoming like or has taken on the characteristic expressed by the root. These verbs are intransitive.

V.D. Exercises

From the list accompanying the following groups of sentences, select the appropriate word for each sentence, then translate the sentences into English.

V.D.1. dalam, dalam-dalam, memperdalam, mendalam, perdalam

a. Cinta kasih Hadi terhadap Ratna sudah sangat _____________.
b. _____________ lubang itu kira-kira satu meter lagi!
c. Dia membaca buku-buku itu untuk _____________ pengetahuannya tentang agama Islam.
d. _____________ kolam renang itu?
e. Pelajaran sejarah Indonesia yang diberikan pada tahun pertama tidak secara _____________.
f. Bernafaslah _____________!
g. Pikirkanlah hal itu _____________!

V.D.2. besar, besar-besar, besarkan, membesar, memperbesar, dibesarkan

a. Hasan _____________ oleh neneknya, karena ibunya meninggal waktu dia berumur dua tahun.
b. Mata Amat _____________, karena heran melihat tas istrinya penuh dengan uang.
c. _____________ api itu, supaya ayam goreng itu lekas masak. Saya sudah lapar betul.
d. Apa nama toko yang paling _____________ di ibu kota?
e. Saya belum punya uang untuk _____________ rumah saya sekarang.
f. Lihatlah! Sel-sel yang hidup itu makin lama makin_____________.
g. Pisang yang dijual orang itu segar kelihatan dan _____________.

V.D.3. tepi, ditepikannya or diketepikannya, menepi, menepikan or mengetepikan

a. Hari Minggu depan kami akan santai ke _____________ laut.
b. Saya takut kepada Udin, dia besar dan kuat. Tiap kali saya bertemu dengan dia di jalan, cepat-cepat saya _____________.
c. Sebelum menari mereka _____________ kursi-kursi di kamar itu.
d. Makanan yang tidak disukainya _____________.

V.D.4. From the following verbs select the appropriate one for each sentence, then translate the sentences into English.

menyemak, menggunung, memutih, menghilang, mengkilat, meluas.

a. Ke mana pencuri itu _____________, ketika dikejar polisi?
b. Rambutnya yang sudah _____________ menunjukkan bahwa umurnya sudah lanjut.
c. Rumah itu sudah lama kosong dan tanaman di halamannya sudah _____________.
d. Pemakaian Bahasa Indonesia, sebagai bahasa pengantar sudah _____________ di negara itu sampai ke pulau-pulau yang kecil.
e. Kelihatankah oleh Saudara sesuatu yang_____________ di jarinya?
f. Saya harus mencuci hari ini, karena cucian saya telah _____________.
g. Pakaiannya selalu rapi dan sepatunya _____________.

V.E. Penggunaan bahasa (Language Usage)

Pahamkanlah pemakaian kata **semua, segala** dan **seluruh** dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. (Note the use of the words 'semua', 'segala' and 'seluruh' in the following sentences.)

V.E.1. The use of the word semua

	Indonesian		English
a.	Hampir **semua** teman-temannya datang mengucapkan 'Selamat jalan'.	a.	Nearly **all** her friends came to bid her farewell.
b.	Apakah **semua** bir itu habis diminumnya?	b.	Did he finish up **all** that beer?
c.	Semua (or: **segala**) yang direncanakannya gagal.	c.	**Everything** he planned for failed
d.	**Semua** (or: **segala**) hal yang berhubungan dengan dirinya, baik atau buruk telah diketahui umum.	d.	**Everything** connected with him personally good or bad is known to the public (public knowledge).
e.	Katakanlah kepada **semua** temannya dan orang yang dikenalnya.	e.	Tell **all** his friends and the people he knows.

V.E.2. The use of the word segala

	Indonesian		English
a.	Dia sabar menghadapi **segala** cobaan yang dialaminya.	a.	She faced patiently **all** the trials which she had experienced.
b.	**Segala** yang dia makan harus ada batasannya, banyak serta jenisnya.	b.	**Everything** that she ate was restricted, both in quantity and kind.
c.	Tuhan menciptakan **segala** yang ada di dunia.	c.	God created **everything** there is on earth.
d.	Jauhilah **segala sesuatu** yang buruk dan jahat.	d.	Keep away from **anything at all** that is bad and evil.
e.	Ambillah **segala (or: semua)** yang ada padanya.	e.	Confiscate (take) **everything** that he has on him.
f.	Dia berpakaian **segala** putih: kemeja putih, celana putih dan sepatu putih.	f.	**Everything** he is wearing is white: white shirt, white trousers and white shoes.

V.E.1.&2. Remarks

Semua usually, means **all, everything** or **everyone**. It is used to indicate the totality of a class or group of things and people.

Segala usually means all, everything **but not** everyone. **Segala** is used to indicate a totality of various things or qualities.

V.E.3. The use of the word **seluruh**

	Indonesian		English
a.	'**Seluruh** badannya terbakar,' kata dokter.	a.	'His **whole** body suffered burns,' said the doctor.
b.	Krisis minyak akan terasa oleh masyarakat di **seluruh** dunia.	b.	The oil crisis will be felt by people **all over** the world.
c.	**Seluruh** desa ikut berduka-cita atas meninggalnya Pak Kasim, kepala desa yang baik itu.	c.	The **whole** village joined in mourning the death of Pak Ka-sim, the fine village headman.
d.	Tindakan itu tidak disetujui oleh **seluruh** panitia orga-nisasi tersebut.	d.	The **entire** committee of the organisation mentioned did not agree with that action.

V.E.3. Remarks
Seluruh is usually equivalent to the English **whole, entire, all over.**

V.E.4. Note the use of the words **semuanya, segalanya** and **seluruhnya** in the following sentences.

i) If **semua, segala** or **seluruh** follow a noun **'nya'** is usually affixed to them (see the following examples a, b and c). This addition of **-nya** emphasises that the (plural) noun referred to is a totality, and there are no exceptions.
ii) Also **-nya** is affixed to **semua, segala,** or **seluruh** to refer to the thing(s) already mentioned or spoken about (see the following examples d, e and f).

	Indonesian		English
a.	Anak-anak **semuanya** mesti disuntik.	a.	**All** children must be inoculated.
b.	Rakyat **seluruhnya** berdiri di belakang pemerintah.	b.	**All** the people stand behind the government.
c.	Hukum-hukum, **segalanya** yang berhubungan dengan per-kawinan telah dipelajarinya.	c.	She has studied **all** the laws concerning marriage.
d.	Harga apa yang tidak naik sekarang? **Segalanya/se-muanya** mahal!	d.	What price has not gone up nowadays? **Everything** is expensive.

e. Rumah, mobil dan perkakas dapur, **segalanya/semuanya** akan dijualnya.
e. He is going to sell the house, the car and the kitchen utensils, **everything.**

f. Apakah Sdr. mengerti yang dibicarakan mereka **seluruhnya**?
f. Did you understand **everything** that they were talking about?

V.E.1, 2, 3 & 4. Exercises

Insert **semua** or **semuanya**, **segala** or **segalanya**, **seluruh** or **seluruhnya** in the following sentences as appropriate and translate the sentences into English.

a. Sayang, dia tidak menonton pilem itu ____________ .
b. Dia putus asa, karena ____________ yang dilakukannya selalu tidak berhasil.
c. Berapa uang yang kamu belanjakan ____________?
d. ____________ buku almarhum Profesor Akbar diberikan oleh istrinya ke perpustakaan.
e. Di toko itu dijual ____________ macam minuman keras, dari dalam dan luar negeri.
f. Dia membaca ____________ sajak itu dengan lancar.
g. Belilah sayur itu ____________! Harganya murah sekali.
h. Ibu memasak ____________ macam makanan untuk pesta itu.

V.F. The use of the word **sanggup** and **its derivatives**

Sanggup means to be able to undertake something, capable of or having the power to. It is an auxiliary verb.

In sentences of this kind, **sanggup** refers to the physical, mental, moral or financial ability of an individual to undertake or to do something.

Observe carefully **the form** and **the meaning** of the words in bold type in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.

a. Saya **sanggup** menolong Saudara.
a. **I am capable of** helping you. or: I am able/willing to help you.

b. Saya tidak **sanggup** membayar uang sekolah semahal itu.
b. I am not **able** to pay school fees as expensive as that.

c. Sdr. **sanggup** mengajar lima belas jam seminggu?
c. Are you **able** (physically) to teach fifteen hours a week?

d. Apakah kamu tidak percaya akan **kesanggupannya**? Berilah dia pekerjaan!
d. Don't you feel confident in **his ability**? Please give him a job!

e.	Bukankah wanita mempunyai **kesanggupan** yang sama dengan pria?	e.	Don't women have the same **ability** as men?
f.	Pekerjaan itu di luar **kesanggupannya.**	f.	That job is beyond his **capabilities.**

V.G. The use of the word **segar** and **its derivatives**
segar: fresh, refreshing

a.	Sayur-sayuran itu **segar** sekali kelihatan.	a.	The vegetables look very **fresh.**
b.	Saya merasa **segar** kembali sesudah tidur beberapa jam.	b.	After sleeping for a few hours I feel **refreshed.**
c.	Minuman itu **segar** sekali.	c.	That drink is very **refreshing.**
d.	Saya menghargai **kesegaran** pikiran-pikiran baru yang dinyatakan pemuda-pemudi di rapat itu.	d.	I appreciate the **freshness** of the new ideas expressed by the young people at that meeting.
e.	Hawa di gunung itu amat **menyegarkan.**	e.	The mountain air is very **refreshing.**
f.	Berenang **menyegarkan** badan.	f.	Swimming **revitalizes** the body.

V.H. The use of the word **sigap** and its derivatives **sigap: efficient, skilful, agile**

a.	Hadi betul-betul **sigap.** Lihatlah betapa **sigapnya** dia menangkis pukulan itu.	a.	Hadi is really **agile.** Look how **skilfully** he wards off the blow.
b.	Pelayan itu **sigap** dan ramah.	b.	That waiter is **efficient** and friendly.
c.	Orang yang dipilih menjadi juru rawat antara lain harus **sigap.**	c.	A person who is selected to become a nurse, among other things must be **efficient.**
d.	Karena **kesigapan** dokter itu orang yang dapat serangan penyakit jantung itu tertolong.	d.	Because of **the prompt action** of that doctor the man who has suffered a heart attack could be saved.
e.	Kalau tidak karena **kesigapan** tetangga saya, rumah saya sudah habis terbakar.	e.	If it has not been for **the quick action** of my neighbour, my house would have been burned to the ground.

V.I. Exercises

After studying the **meaning** and the **usage** of the words **sanggup, segar, sigap** and their **derivatives**, complete the following sentences by filling in the blanks or adding the necessary words. Use your imagination!

1. Karena dia tidak **sanggup** membayar sewa ______________, dia tinggal dengan orang tuanya sekarang.
2. Karena dia sudah tua, tukang becak itu tidak **sanggup** lagi ______________ becak seperti dulu.
3. Daging itu tidak **segar** kelihatan, sebab itu tidak saya ______________.
4. Bukalah jendela itu, supaya ______________ **segar** masuk.
5. Kami senang ______________ pikiran-pikiran yang **segar**, yang dikemukakan oleh pemuda-pemudi di rapat itu.
6. Mereka ______________ melihat **kesanggupan** anak-anak itu.
7. Juru rawat yang **sigap** itu yang ______________ nyawa (life) tetangga saya.
8. Inem, pelayan yang jujur, rajin dan **sigap** itu ______________oleh majikannya.
9. Kami tidak mempertanyakan **kesanggupan**nya; itu sudah ______________.
10. Berjalan, (ber)lari dan berenang tidak hanya **menyegarkan** badan, tetapi juga ______________.

V.J. Pekerjaan Rumah (Homework)

Buatlah kalimat dengan memakai kata-kata yang berikut sehingga jelas artinya. **Kemudian** terjemahkan kalimat-kalimat itu ke dalam bahasa Inggris.

1. semua
2. segalanya
3. seluruh
4. sanggup
5. kesanggupan
6. segar
7. kesegaran
8. menyegarkan
9. sigap
10. kesigapan

V.K. Memperluas Kosa Kata (Vocabulary Expansion)

Note the use of the word **jarang** in the following sentences and replace it with a word opposite in meaning to it, appropriate to the context. Choose the word to replace it from the following: **padat:** packed, dense; **lebat:** thick (of hair, leaves), abundant (of fruit); **tebal:** thick; **rapat:** dense, to be

close together; **sering** or **banyak.** Give the English equivalent of each sentence.

Contoh: i) Dulu rambutnya tidak **jarang** seperti ini. (taken from the text)
Her hair used not to be as **thin** as it is now.
ii) Dulu rambutnya tidak **tebal** seperti ini.
Her hair used not to be as **thick** as it is now.

1. Buah pohon mangga itu **jarang** tahun ini.
2. Australia negara yang berpenduduk **jarang**kah?
3. Jangan terlalu **jarang** menanam bunga itu!
4. Dia **jarang** minum bir.
5. Batik seperti ini **jarang** terdapat sekarang.
6. Kata itu **jarang** dipakai dalam percakapan sehari-hari.
7. Dia sering memakai kebaya yang terbuat dari kain yang **jarang** (transparent).
8. Benarkah anak-anak mereka **jarang** sekali? Berapa tahun beda umur anaknya yang sulung dengan yang kedua?
9. Gigi anak itu terlalu **jarang** tumbuhnya.
10. Pembantu yang seperti Minah **jarang** didapat sekarang.

V.L. Mengemukakan buah pikiran secara lisan maupun tertulis (Oral and written expression)

Dengan memakai kata-kata dan susunan kalimat Anda sendiri, siapkanlah sebuah karangan, menggambarkan keadaan seorang yang sakit keras. Panjang karangan tidak lebih dari 150 kata. (Using your own words and phrases, prepare a composition of not more than 150 words describing a very sick person, then read it aloud to the class.)
Misalnya: **Menunggu ajal** (Waiting for death)

V.A. English version

TWO WORLDS

Her hair used not to be as thin as this. Now, when she combed it, she had to do so very gently for it was painful if the comb touched the skin of her scalp. And also, as she combed her hair gently, she hoped that not too much would fall. She had lost so much of what had been hers before she contracted typhus. Yes, so much was lost. Her freshness, vitality, time and her physical capability had been so easily consumed by the thousands of germs that had eaten away her health. And this hair, how bitter she felt at seeing her sole natural adornment, that part of her, not as beautiful as it had once been. Gently she drew the comb through it. It was thin and coarse. It

no longer shone. She didn't want to put oil on it, because she thought that oil would make her hair appear thin. She didn't want her hair to be thin, she didn't want others to see that her hair was thin.

Although by thinking this way she was deceiving herself, just the same, she tried to soothe her own feelings which made her believe that she was still able to make herself sufficiently attractive with her hair. Softly and carefully, she stroked her hair again for the thousandth time. She looked at her face for a moment in the mirror. Oh, no! She couldn't bear to gaze on that face. The light of her eyes was very dim and faded. So sharp was the difference between what she used to be, vigorous with a lively expression in her eyes, and what she was now as reflected in the mirror. She no longer possessed all that had belonged to her before, eaten away by the disease. She had become a haunt of those thousands of germs which, without her realising it, had plundered part of herself.

She still remembered how frightened she had been of the inoculation needle when she was small. She remembered her mother too, she used always to be with her mother when she had an injection. Her mother had always clasped her fondly while whispering words of encourangement into her ear. And she remembered too, how once she had run home from school, because there were inoculations at school, and she remembered as well how her mother had embraced her fondly and tried to convince her why people had to be inoculated.

She could never be as strong again as she had been. There were restrictions on everything she ate, on quantity and kind. How restricted she was now. This was something which she was forced to endure along with the loss of part of her former self.

It was as though she was no longer able to give any meaning to her life. The life which her mother had always planned and longed for (for her): Be some one who means something to your family. What her mother had longed for, what she had said, the mother (person) who was no longer with her on her journey through life.

BAB KEENAM

(Chapter VI)

VI.A. Translation practice (Latihan terjemahan)

Bacalah iklan yang berikut dengan saksama, kemudian terjemahkanlah ke dalam bahasa Inggris. Boleh memakai kamus, kalau perlu. (Read the following advertisement carefully. Then translate it into English. You may use a dictionary, if necessary.)

VI.B. Contoh terjemahan (Model translation)

Bacalah terjemahan yang berikut dengan teliti dan bandingkanlah dengan terjemahan yang Anda siapkan. (Read the following translation carefully and compare it with the one you have prepared.)

This is a typical example of the language used in advertising. After you have made your own translation and compared it with the one given, you will notice that both the style and phrasing will need rearrangement to produce acceptable English. This of course has to be taken into account in any type of translation.

Is your children's eyesight really good?

A new school year is here....

Perhaps your children's vision is defective to the extent that it could affect their school work.

Perfect vision fosters the urge to learn — children do not easily tire or feel unwilling to study.

Thus your children's future is assured.

To ensure that your children do well at school have their eyes examined; avoid further harm to their vision.

Come to our place 'Optik Tunggal' (The One and Only Optician) for a free eye check-up by computer.

School and university students, the future of our nation, are given 10% discount and an attractive gift as a souvenir.

Optik Tunggal

VI.C. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

The use of the word **'malas' in combination with a verb**
Malas + verb means do not feel like doing whatever is indicated by the accompanying verb.

Give the English equivalents of the following sentences.

a. Saya **malas memasak** hari ini. Bagaimana kalau kita makan di restoran saja?
b. Kenapa dia masih belum mandi? Mungkin(kah) dia **malas menghadiri** kuliah pagi ini?
c. Hari Senin banyak karyawan yang **malas pergi** bekerja.
d. Hasnah **malas menyertai** orang tuanya dan tamu-tamu untuk makan malam. Dia pemalu.
e. Kenapa pekerjaannya masih belum selesai? Dia **malas menyelesaikannya?**

VI.D.1. The use of the word **agar, supaya, or agar supaya**

Agar, supaya or agar supaya in the following sentences all mean 'so that' or occasionally 'in order that'. They are conjunctions and are interchangeable. We have learned in **Langkah Baru** Book I (see 16.10.A)

that **supaya** introduces a subordinate clause indicating the purpose of the action expressed in the principal clause. Give the English equivalents of the following sentences.

a. Dia meminyaki rambutnya, **supaya** mengkilat.
b. **Agar** hasil ujianmu tidak mengecewakan rajin-rajinlah belajar dari sekarang.
c. **Supaya** penyakit itu tidak meluas, anak-anak di seluruh desa itu harus disuntik.
d. Dia menyisir rambutnya dengan perlahan sekali, **agar** tak banyak yang rontok.
e. Perlihatkanlah kepandaian dan kesanggupan Anda, **agar supaya** Anda diberi pekerjaan.
f. Saya kurangi makan nasi, roti atau kentang, supaya turun berat badan saya.

VI.D.2. The use of the word supaya/agar with desiderative verbs

Perhatikanlah pemakaian kata **supaya/agar** dalam kalimat-kalimat di bawah ini. Lalu terjemahkan ke dalam bahasa Inggris.

1. Presiden **menganjurkan** kepada rakyat **supaya** menyokong pemerintah.
2. Dokter **menasihatkan** kepadanya **supaya** tidak merokok lagi.
3. Kalangan pemberontak **diperintahkan supaya** meletakkan senjata dan menyerah.
4. Kami **diminta (supaya)** datang ke kantor polisi.
5. Anda sekalian **diminta (supaya)** mengosongkan ruangan ini dengan segera.
6. Pegawai-pegawai **menuntut agar/supaya** gaji mereka dinaikkan.
7. Berkali-kali ayah saya **menyarankan supaya** mobil saya ini dijual saja, karena sering rusak.
8. Mahasiswa **mengusulkan agar/supaya** ujian diundurkan satu minggu.
9. Raden Ajeng Kartini **menuntut supaya** para gadis Indonesia dibolehkan bersekolah.
10. Pemerintah **mengimbau agar/supaya** masyarakat turut menjaga kelestarian hutan.

Remarks

In Indonesian, **many desiderative verbs (i.e. verbs expressive of exhortation, need or desire)** are often followed by words like **agar** or **supaya** which usually need no equivalent in English translation. In certain contexts, however, the word **supaya** following a **verb of exhortation** requires the word 'that' as an English equivalent. Note that the word 'that' in such a context is **never** translated by the Indonesian word **'bahwa'**.

VI.E. Penggunaan bahasa (Language usage)

Penggunaan kata dan ungkapan (Use of words and phrases)
Perhatikanlah bentuk dan arti kata-kata yang dicetak tebal dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. Kemudian kuasailah kalimat-kalimat itu. (Observe carefully **the form** and **the meaning** of the words in bold type in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.)

VI.E.1. The use of the word **mungkin** and **its derivatives.**
mungkin: perhaps, possible, probably

a. **Mungkin** penglihatan mereka terganggu. (Taken from the text)	a. **Perhaps** their eyesight is defective. or: **Perhaps** there is something wrong with their eyesight.
b. Dia **mungkin** sudah kawin sekarang.	b. She is **probably** married now.
c. Aku **tidak mungkin** dapat menolong dia.	c. I **couldn't possibly** help him.
d. Itu **tidak mungkin**.	d. It is very **unlikely**.
e. Saya akan kembali **selekas mungkin.**	e. I'll be back as **soon as possible**.
f. Kami akan membantu mereka **sedapat mungkin.**	f. We are going to help them **to the best of our ability**.
g. Membacalah **sebanyak mungkin**.	g. Read **as much as you possibly can**.
h. **(Bagai)mana mungkin** saya dapat menolak permintaannya?	h. **How could I possibly** refuse her request? **How could I possibly** have refused her request?
i. **Besar kemungkinan** bahwa dia akan dipindahkan ke Pontianak.	i. **It is highly probable/There is a big chance** that he will be transferred to Pontianak.
j. Ada beberapa **kemungkinan** yang dapat kita pertimbangkan.	j. There are several **possibilities** which we can (could) consider.
k. Bantuan uang dari teman-temannya yang **memungkinkan** dia berobat ke ibu kota.	k. It was the financial help from her friends that **made it possible** for her to go to the capital city for medical treatment.

VI.E.2. The use of the word **jamin** and **its derivatives, jamin, menjamin: assure, guarantee.**

a. Saya **(men)jamin**, kamu akan dapat pekerjaan.	a. **I guarantee** that you will get a job.

b. Saya (**men)jamin**, Anda tidak akan menyesal.

b. I **guarantee** you won't have any regrets.

c. Batik ini **dijamin** tidak akan luntur.

c. This batik is **guaranteed** not to run (to be colour fast).

d. Jam itu **dijamin** tahan air.

d. That watch is **guaranteed** to be waterproof.

e. Kekayaan tidak **menjamin** kebahagiaan.

e. Wealth doesn't **guarantee** happiness.

f. Ini **surat jaminan** mesin itu.

f. This is the **guarantee certificate** (**warranty**) for the machine.

g. Belilah mobil yang baik, kuat dan stabil ini! Keamanan Anda akan **terjamin**.

g. Buy this good, strong and stable car! Your safety will be **assured**.

h. Siapakah **penjamin** keselamatan anak-anak kita selama berdarmawisata ke Gunung Bromo itu?

h. Who will be the **guarantor** of the safety of our children during the excursion to Mount Bromo?

VI.E.3 The use of the word **periksa** and **its derivative**:
memeriksa: to examine, check, search, test, assess
memeriksakan: to have something examined

a. Guru sedang **memeriksa** ujian murid-muridnya.

a. The teacher is **assessing** the students' examination papers.

b. Ada beberapa jam polisi **memeriksa** rumah karyawan bank itu.

b. It took several hours for the police **to search** the house of the bank employee.

c. Ibu **memeriksa** seluruh rumah itu sebelum memutuskan untuk membelinya.

c. Mother **examined** the whole house before she decided to buy it.

d. Mata Ibu akan **diperiksa** oleh dokter sekali lagi.

d. Mother's eyes will **be checked** by the doctor once again.

e. Saya sudah lama tidak **memeriksakan** mata saya.

e. I haven't **had** my eyes **examined** for a long time.

f. Ke dokter yang mana dia akan pergi untuk **memeriksakan** darahnya?

f. To which doctor is he going to **have** his blood **tested**?

g. Sebelum dia menjadi tentara segalanya harus **diperiksakan**: darah, jantung, paru-paru, mata, telinga dan lain-lain.

g. Before he joined the army everything **had** to **be examined**: blood, heart, lungs, eyes, ears and so on.

h. Ada beberapa orang **peme-**

h. Several **examiners** were

riksa yang ditunjuk untuk ujian akhir tahun.

appointed for the end of year examination.

i. Saya masih menunggu hasil **pemeriksaan** dokter mengenai penyakit Ayah.

i. I am still waiting for the results of the doctor's **examination** concerning father's illnes.

VI.E.1, 2 & 3 Exercises

After studying the meaning and the usage of the words **mungkin, jamin, periksa** and their derivatives, complete the following sentences by filling in the blanks or adding the necessary word. Use your imagination!

a. Sekali setahun bapak saya harus pergi ke dokter untuk **pemeriksaan** ______________.
b. Gelas itu **dijamin** tahan ______________.
c. Apakah pakaian anggota Barisan Pemadam Kebakaran **dijamin** tahan ______________?
d. Polisi **memeriksa** kebenaran laporan orang itu, sebelum ______________ tindakan.
e. Beliau sudah tua, **mungkin** ______________nya tidak begitu baik lagi.
f. Besar **kemungkinan** bahwa dia akan ______________ ke Surabaya.
g. Kekurangan uang yang **tidak memungkinkan** dia untuk ______________ sekolahnya. Sayang, sekolahnya tidak tamat.
h. Saya **jamin** dia tidak akan menyesal membeli ______________ itu, karena harganya murah sekali.
i. Hari ini saya **tidak mungkin** dapat ______________ Anda, karena saya harus pergi ke luar kota.
j. Saya kesal, karena **surat jaminan** sepeda motor, yang saya beli bulan yang lalu,______________ .
k Setelah dokter itu **memeriksa** darah itu , dia menyatakan bahwa darah itu adalah darah ______________, bukan darah binatang.
l. Pekerjaan murid-muridnya **diperiksa** oleh guru itu, diberinya angka, sebelum ______________ nya.
m. Tidak **mungkin** si Amin yang ______________ barang itu, karena kami tahu si Amin orang yang jujur.
n. Seorang pun tidak dapat **menjamin** Dogol, bahwa dia tidak akan mencuri atau ______________orang lagi, karena dia tidak dapat mengubah sifatnya yang buruk itu.
o. 'Kami tidak bisa **menjamin** keselamatan diri Anda kalau Anda ______________ daerah berbahaya itu,' kata polisi itu.

VI.F. Fluency Exercise

Study the following advertisement. Imagine yourself an actor promoting this following product on commercial radio or television. Say it aloud as clearly and convincingly as you can.

Obat Tetes
yang menyehatkan
dan menyejukkan mata

- Segera menyembuhkan mata yang perih, merah-meradang gatal, dan berair.
- Menyejukkan-menyamankan mata yang lelah dan tegang.
- INSTO tidak menimbulkan rasa pedih di mata.

VI.G. Wordlist

1. menyehatkan: to heal
2. menyejukkan: to soothe, soothing, cooling
3. menyembuhkan: to cure, heal, relieve
4. perih or pedih: sore, to sting, smart
5. merah-meradang: red burning
6. gatal: itching
7. menyamankan: refreshing
8. lelah: tired, weary, exhausted
9. tegang: tense, strained
10. (dengan) cuma-cuma: gratis, free of charge
11. pangkas, berpangkas: to have a haircut
    tempat pangkas: barber, hairdresser's
    memangkas: to cut, trim, prune

VI.H. Exercise

Practicing specific language skills: predicting words
One word is missing in each of the blanks in the following sentences:
Supply the apppropriate missing words so that the advertisment makes sense.
Any word which makes sense sequentially is acceptable.

INSTO

Insto obat tetes _______________ menyehatkan dan menyejukkan _______________. Segera menyembuhkan mata _______________ perih, merah meradang, _______________ dan berair. Menyejukkan, _______________ mata yang lelah _______________ tegang. Insto tidak _______________ rasa pedih di _______________. Mintalah perawatan cuma-cuma _______________ obat tetes mata _______________ di tempat-tempat pangkas _______________ atau salon-salon kecantikan _______________ di kota Anda.

VI.I. Translation Exercises (Latihan Terjemahan)

Terjemahkanlah kalimat-kalimat yang berikut ke dalam Bahasa Indonesia.

1. My eyes are red and itching. Do you have eye drops?
2. Yes, have you ever used 'Insto' before? It doesn't sting the eyes.
3. Old people should have free medical treatment.
4. Mother has to have her eyes examined at least once every two years.
5. It is possible that she will have to wear glasses for reading.
6. How could I possibly help them? I don't have the time.
7. Higher education nowadays doesn't guarantee that you will get a job.
8. I can't go out this evening, because I have to mark (assess) my students' examination papers.
9. Which barber's shop do you usually go to? Is it the best in town?

10. Although the man said that this watch was guaranteed to be waterproof, I always take it off when I shower.

VI.J. Conversation based on the advertisement INSTO; study the conversation and memorise it.

A. Mata saya merah dan gatal. Obat tetes mata apa yang biasanya Anda gunakan untuk mata yang merah dan gatal?

B. Saya memakai Insto, karena Insto tidak menimbulkan rasa pedih di mata.

A. Bagaimana kalau untuk mata perih dan berair?

B. Juga Insto yang saya pakai. Insto menyembuhkan mata yang perih dan berair.

A. Tidak ada pengaruh sampingnya?

B. Setahu saya, tidak.

A. Untuk mata lelah dan tegang, karena banyak membaca atau menonton T.V. misalnya, apa juga Insto yang Anda gunakan?

B. Ya, Insto menyejukkan dan menyegarkan mata yang lelah dan tegang.

A. Terima kasih, saya segera akan pergi ke apotik membeli Insto.

C. Tunggu dulu! Apakah tidak lebih baik, kalau Anda periksakan mata Anda yang merah dan gatal itu kepada dokter mata? Insto mempan untuk matanya tetapi belum tentu untuk mata Anda.

VI.K. Sentence Construction

Make a sentence with each of the following word or words so the meaning is clear. The words are taken from the two advertisements in this chapter. Then give the English equivalents of each sentence.

1. mempengaruhi
2. sempurna
3. menghindarkan
4. lanjut
5. kenang-kenangan
6. gatal
7. berair
8. pedih
9. tetes or setetes
10. dengan cuma-cuma

VI.L. Mengemukakan fikiran secara lisan maupun tertulis (Oral and Written Expression).

Prepare an advertisement of not more than 50 words to promote one of the following products or companies: a brand of cigarette or tooth paste, a make of car, a soap product, an airline or a hotel.

After your work has been checked, say it aloud, preferably without the text. This is a useful exercise to develop fluency in speech.

VI.F. English version

INSTO

Drops
that heal
and soothe the eyes

Quickly relieve smarting, red burning,
itching and watering eyes
soothing, refreshing
tired and strained eyes.
INSTO doesn't sting the eyes.

Ask for free treatment
with Insto eye-drops
at the best hairdresser's
and beauty-salons
in your town.

BAB KETUJUH

(Chapter VII)

VII.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)

Bacalah pelajaran di bawah ini dengan saksama.

MENCARI

Pagi-pagi bangun, **mengejar pukul tujuh**[1].... bekerja.

Pukul dua siang pulang, makan.... **istirahat.**[2]

Malam hari.... tidur.

Pagi-pagi bangun lagi.

Begitulah selalu, **berulang**[3] setiap hari, selama dua puluh empat jam, setiap minggu, setiap bulan, bertahun-tahun.

Harus bangun, harus mengejar pukul tujuh, harus bekerja, harus makan, harus tidur dan berbagai **keharusan**[4] lagi, **lelakon**[5] hidup **selama sehari-semalam**[6]...

Hidup **tunduk**[7] pada keharusan, **ditentukan**[8] waktu.

Saya bertanya kepada diri sendiri: 'Apakah memang demikian seharusnya hidup di dunia? Hidup **diatur**[9] oleh waktu, terbelenggu,[10] tidak bisa **semaunya?**[11] Lihatlah burung, **beterbangan**[12] **melayang-layang**[13] di **cakrawala,**[14] sekehendaknya sendiri. Hinggap di mana saja, membuat sarang pun di mana saja, **sesuka hati.**[15] Tak ada yang melarang, tak ada yang **menegur,**[16] tak ada yang **mengawasi,**[17] bebas!'

Maka saya pun berangkat setelah terlebih dahulu mendapat **izin cuti.**[18]

Ke mana? Entahlah. Pergi **tanpa**[19] **rencana,**[20] **tak keruan tujuan,**[21] **entah ke mana 'kan tiba.**[22]

Mau apa? Entahlah. Barangkali hendak **meniru**[23] burung.

Sarung pelekat,[24] **peci,**[25] kumasukkan ke dalam **ransel.**[26] Kebetulan masih punya ransel **peninggalan**[27] jaman berjuang dahulu. Kecuali itu, juga kumasukkan **bekal**[28] berupa makanan, **antara lain**[29] **kornet,**[30] **sardencis**[31] dua kaleng, malah rokok pun ada kubawa kira-kira lima bungkus. Termos untuk wadah[32] air minum tak ketinggalan. **Foto-toestel**[33] kuselendangkan pula, **tak ubahnya**[34] dengan wartawan foto.

Ketika sampai di stasion, saya segera membeli karcis dan tak lama kemudian kereta api berangkat.

Ketika kereta api berhenti di sebuah stasion kecil yang terletak di tengah-tengah **perbukitan,**[35] setelah **melalui**[36] jalan yang **berkelok-kelok**[37]

serta **mendaki,**[38] **hatiku merasa kepingin**[39] turun. Dan meskipun menurut karcis belum lagi sampai ke tempat tujuan, **namun**[40] karena **hati ingin turun,**[41] ah, maka saya pun turun di situ.

Oleh Tjaraka
dikutip dari 'Dua Orang Dukun'
disusun oleh Ajip Rosidi.

Notes

Sarung pelekat: a type of sarong with rectangular motifs. A peci (pici) and such a sarong are frequently worn in Indonesia when performing the five daily ritual prayers prescribed by Islam.

VII.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts.

1. mengejar pukul tujuh: in a rush to get ready by seven (writer's individual phrase)
2. istirahat: to rest, have a siesta
3. berulang: to repeat, repeated, recur
4. keharusan: obligation, necessity
5. lelakon: scenario
6. selama sehari-semalam: for the whole 24 hours, day and night
7. tunduk: subjugated, subjected to, subordinated
8. ditentukan: determined, fixed, dictated
9. diatur: regulated
10. terbelenggu: restricted, tied, bound; belenggu: handcuffs, shackles
11. semaunya: at will; tidak bisa semaunya: one can't do as one pleases
12. beterbangan: flying around
13. melayang-layang: hovering
14. cakrawala: atmosphere, sky, firmament
15. sesuka hati: as one chooses, pleasing oneself
16. menegur: to criticise (act, error), warn, greet, address
17. mengawasi: supervise,to keep an eye on
18. izin cuti: leave of absence
19. tanpa: without
20. rencana: plan, planning
21. tak keruan tujuan: without any particular purpose
22. entah ke mana 'kan tiba: I don't know where I will end up
23. meniru: to imitate
24. sarung pelekat: sarong (to pray in)
25. peci: a cap of black velvet
26. ransel: haversack, knapsack
27. peninggalan: heirloom, relic, legacy, something remaining
28. bekal: provisions
29. antara lain: among other things
30. kornet: corned beef (in tin)
31. sardencis: sardines
32. wadah: container
33. foto-toestel: camera (Dutch word)

34. tak ubahnya: not different from (just like)
35. perbukitan: a group of hills, a hilly region
36. melalui: to go through, pass through
37. berkelok-kelok: winding
38. mendaki: hilly, steep, to climb, ascend
39. hatiku merasa kepingin: I felt a strong urge
40. namun: nevertheless, yet
41. hati ingin turun: I wanted to get off very much.

VII.C. Comprehension

Jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan di bawah ini dengan kalimat yang **lengkap** dalam Bahasa Indonesia. (Answer the questions below in Indonesian with **full** sentences.)

1. Apa(kah) hidup si 'Saya' sehari-hari membosankan atau menggairahkan? Jawablah dengan ringkas.
2. Kenapa dia merasa hidupnya terikat?
3. Dia mau hidup seperti burung. Terangkanlah cara hidup burung yang disukainya.
4. Kemudian dia memutuskan untuk mengambil cuti. Dia berencana mau pergi ke mana?
5. Apa(kah)yang dimasukkannya ke dalam ranselnya sebelum berangkat?
6. Selain dari makanan dan rokok apalagi yang dibawanya?
7. Dia bepergian naik apa? Lukiskanlah pemandangan daerah yang dilaluinya.
8. Waktu kereta api berhenti di sebuah setasiun kecil, dia turun. Apa(kah) dia sudah sampai ke tempat yang ditujunya?

VII.D. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

1. The use of the word **diri**

When the subject and object are identical, the word **'diri'** is used for the object, i.e. the subject acts upon itself.
Perhatikanlah **arti** kata-kata yang dicetak tebal dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. Kemudian kuasailah kalimat-kalimat itu!

diri: self, one's self

a. Siapa nama orang yang **(mem)bunuh diri** itu?	a. What is the name of the person who **killed himself**?
b. Kamu harus **menjaga diri mu**! Makan dan tidurmu harus teratur!	b. You have **to look after yourself**. Eat and sleep at regular hours!
c. Dua orang tahanan yang **melarikan diri** dari penjara itu telah tertangkap kembali.	c. Two prisoners who **escaped** from the prison have been recaptured.

VII.D.2. The use of the word **sendiri**
sendiri: one's self, personally, own

	Indonesian		English
a.	Jangan **salahkan dirimu sendiri.**	a.	Don't **blame yourself.**
b.	Dia selalu **mementingkan diri(nya) sendiri.**	b.	He always **puts himself first** (He is always selfish).
c.	Dia tidak **memikirkan diri-(nya) sendiri.**	c.	He doesn't think of **himself.**
d.	Itu sama halnya dengan **menipu diri sendiri.**	d.	That is tantamount to **self-deception.**
e.	Dia sudah lama **menarik diri** dari partai itu dan sekarang dia membentuk **partainya sendiri.**	e.	He **resigned/withdrew** from that party a long time ago and now he is forming **his own party.**
f.	'Saya tidak ada waktu untuk memikirkan hal-hal orang lain, **hal-hal saya sendiri** lebih penting,' katanya, lalu pergi.	f.	'I don't have time to think about other people's business, my own concerns are more important' he said and left.
g.	Itu **mobilnya sendiri,** bukan mobil pemerintah.	g.	That is **his own car,** not a government car.
h.	**Uangnya sendiri** yang dipakainya untuk menjamu tamu itu, bukan uang pemerintah.	h.	It was **his own money** he used to entertain those guests, not government money.
i.	Saya beli buku itu untuk **saya sendiri.**	i.	I bought that book for **my-self.**
j.	**Saya sendiri** tidak per-caya kepadanya.	j.	**I myself/personally** don't believe him.
k.	**Dia sendiri** akan memintanya nanti.	k.	**He personally/himself** will ask for it.

Note: 'Sendiri' in combination with 'diri' is used to indicate emphasis.

VII.D.3. The use of **sendiri** or **seorang diri** or **sendirian**
Sendiri in the following examples means **alone** or **by one's self.**

	Indonesian		English
a.	Dia tinggal **sendiri/seorang diri/sendirian** di rumah sebesar itu?	a.	Does he live **alone/by himself** in a house as big as that?
b.	Beranikah kamu pergi **sendiri/seorang diri/ sendirian** ke sana?	b.	Do you dare to go there **alone/ by yourself?**
c.	Dia mengerjakan semuanya	c.	He did it all **by himself/**

	itu **sendiri/sendirian/ seorang diri**.		**alone.**
d.	Biarkanlah **mereka** pergi **sendiri!**	d.	Let them go **by themselves!**

VII.D.4. Other **uses** and **meanings** of **sendiri** and its **derivatives**

a.	Walaupun mereka serumah, mereka memasak **sendiri-sendiri.**	a.	Even though they share a house they cook **separately.**
b.	Waktu kami makan di restoran baru-baru ini kami membayar **sendiri-sendiri.**	b.	When we ate at a restaurant recently we paid **separately.**
c.	Kalau kamu jarang ke kuliah dan tidak belajar, **dengan sendirinya** kamu akan gagal ujian.	c.	If you rarely go to classes and don't study, **naturally** you are going to fail the exam.
d.	Kenapa dia selalu suka **menyendiri?** Tidak sukakah dia bergaul?	d.	Why does she like to be **alone**? Doesn't she like to mix?
e.	Kalau dalam hal menulis dia mempunyai gaya yang **tersendiri**.	e.	If it is a matter of writing he has an **individual** style.
f.	Kamar kerjanya jauh dari kamar anak-anak, **tersendiri** di ujung rumah.	f.	His study is a long way from the children's room, it **is set apart** at the end of the house.

VII.D.5. Note the **use** and the **meaning** of the word **pribadi** and its **derivatives**.
pribadi: individual, personal, private

a.	Yang dikemukakan oleh Sdr. Rustam di rapat adalah pendapat **pribadi** (pendapatnya sendiri), bukanlah pendapatnya sebagai ketua.	a.	What Rustam put forward at the meeting was a **personal** view, not his view as chairman.
b.	**Pengawal pribadi** wakil presidenkah yang tertembak mati?	b.	Was it the **bodyguard** of the Vice-president who was shot dead?
c.	Dia datang naik **kapal terbang pribadi**.	c.	He came by his **private plane**.
d.	Jangan bawa-bawa soal **pribadi.**	d.	Don't bring in **personal matters.**
e.	Dia benar-benar seorang wa-	e.	She is quite a **personality**.

	nita yang **berkepribadian.**		
f.	Dari surat-surat Raden Ajeng Kartini terbayang jelas **ke-pribadiannya.**	f.	Raden Ajeng Kartini's **personality** is clearly reflected in her letters.
g.	Ini adalah soalku sendiri, soal **pribadi.**	g.	This is my own affair, a **private** matter.

VII.E. Penggunaan bahasa (Language Usage)
Penggunaan kata dan ungkapan (Use of words and phrases)
Perhatikanlah **bentuk** dan **arti** kata-kata yang dicetak tebal dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. Kemudian kuasailah kalimat-kalimat itu.

VII.E.1. The use of the word **tinggal** and **its derivatives.**
tinggal: to live, stay, remain.

a.	Dia tidak **tinggal** dengan orang tuanya lagi.	a.	He doesn't **live** with his parents anymore.
b.	Kalau di Jakarta, biasanya Anda **tinggal** di hotel mana?	b.	When in Jakarta, at which hotel do you usually **stay?**
c.	Uang kita **tinggal** berapa?	c.	How much money do we have **left?**
d.	Masih ada bir yang **tinggal?** Marilah kita minum.	d.	Is there still some beer **left?** Let us have some.
e.	Buku **yang tinggal** tidak akan dijual.	e.	**The remainder** of the books are not for sale.
f.	Surat itu sudah diketik. Tuan **tinggal** menandatangani **saja lagi.**	f.	The letter has been typed. **It just remains** for you to sign it (you **only have** to sign it).
g	Soto sudah saya masak. Kalau Nyonya mau makan, **tinggal** memanaskannya **saja lagi.**	g.	I have cooked the 'soto'. If you want to eat, you **only have to** heat it up. **(It only remains** for you to heat it up.)
h.	Ayahnya sudah lama **me-ninggal** (dunia), waktu dia masih kecil.	h.	His father **died** a long time ago, when he was still a child.
i.	Waktu dia pergi ke Bandung anaknya **ditinggalkannya** dengan ibunya.	i.	When she went to Bandung, **she left** her child with her mother.
j.	Bolehkah saya **meninggal-kan** kopor saya di sini?	j.	May I **leave** my suitcase here?
k.	Kebetulan saya masih punya ransel, **peninggalan** jaman berjuang dahulu.	k.	It so happens I still have a haversack, **something remaining/a legacy** from the time of the revolution.

l.	Perhiasan ini **peninggal-an** dari nenek saya.	l.	This piece of jewellery is an **heirloom** from my grand-mother.
m.	Anak itu menangis saja **sepeninggal** ibunya.	m.	The child cried all the time **during the absence** of his mother.
n.	Termos untuk wadah air minum tak **ketinggalan.**	n.	The thermos for drinking water **was not left behind.** (I **didn't over-look/forget** the thermos for drinking water.)

VII.E.2. The use of the word **dapat** and **its derivatives**
dapat: can, be able
(men)dapat: to get, find, obtain, have

a.	Saya **dapat** menjemput Saudara nanti malam.	a.	I **can** pick you up this evening (tonight).
b.	Carilah buku itu **sampai dapat.** Buku itu buku per-pustakaan.	b.	Look for the book **until you find it**. It's a library book.
c.	Maka saya pun berangkat setelah terlebih dahulu **men-dapat** izin cuti.	c.	So I then set out after **obtain-ing** approved (official) leave beforehand.
d.	Dia **(men)dapat** mesin tulis dari ayahnya untuk hari ulang tahunnya.	d.	He **got** a typewriter from his father for his birthday.
e.	Saya sudah lama tidak **(men) dapat** surat dari Indonesia.	e.	I haven't **had** a letter from Indonesia for a long time.
f.	Waktu saya pulang saya **da-pati** Ibu kurang sehat.	f.	When I went home **I found** Mother was unwell.
g.	Waktu saya melihat Amin masuk, cepat-cepat saya **per-gi mendapatkannya**.	g.	When I saw Amin come in, I quickly **went up to him**.
h.	**Sedapat** surat itu saya pun berangkatlah dengan kapal terbang.	h.	**As soon as I got** the letter I left by plane.
i.	Pencuri itu **kedapatan** oleh Ibu sedang membuka jendela dapur.	i.	Mother **caught** the thief **in the act** of opening the kitchen window.
j.	Berapa **pendapatan**nya rata-rata sebulan?	j.	How much is his **income** on average a month?
k.	Bagaimana **pendapat**mu tentang ujian kemarin?	k.	What is your **opinion** of yesterday's test?

VII.E.1.& 2. Exercises

Insert one of the given verbs in the following sentences where appropriate and translate the complete sentences into English.

a. **tinggal, ketinggalan, peninggalan, meninggalkan, meninggal**

1. Mereka betul-betul menghargai _____________ dari nenek mereka.
2. Waktu saya dipindahkan dari desa saya ke kota besar, sedih hati saya _____________ teman-teman yang saya sukai dan desa yang saya sayangi.
3. Kartu hari ulang tahun untuk Paman sudah saya beli, _____________ mengirimkannya saja lagi.
4. Sudah bertahun-tahun dia mencari ibunya. Sampai sekarang dia tidak tahu, apakah ibunya masih hidup atau sudah _____________.
5. Wah, lihatlah! Hari akan hujan. Jas hujan saya _____________ di rumah.

b. **dapat, mendapat, kedapatan, pendapatan, didapatinya.**

1. Dia betul-betul kecewa melihat apa yang _____________,ketika dia tiba di rumah.
2. Hadi takut dan tidak tahu apa yang harus dilakukannya, ketika dia _____________ oleh ayahnya mengisap ganja.
3. Siapa yang _____________ mengantarkan kamu ke lapangan terbang besok? Sayang, saya tidak bisa karena saya ada ujian.
4. Sekarang sukar sekali untuk _____________ tempat di sekolah itu, karena jumlah pelajar-pelajar yang diterima terbatas sekali.
5. Apakah _____________ suaminya cukup untuk kebutuhan keluarganya sehari-hari?

VII.F. Observe carefully the use of **semaunya, sekehendaknya** and **sesukanya** in the following sentences.

a.	Hidup diatur oleh waktu, terbelenggu, tidak bisa **semaunya.**	a.	Life is regulated by time, bound, one can't **do as one pleases.**
b.	Lihatlah burung, beterbangan, melayang-layang di cakrawala **sekehendaknya sendiri.**	b.	Look at the birds flying around hovering in the sky **to their hearts' content.**
c.	Hinggap di mana saja, membuat sarang pun di mana saja, **sesuka hati/sesukanya.**	c.	Perching anywhere, building their nests anywhere **as they choose.**
d.	Dia berbuat **semaunya/se-**	d.	He acts/does **as he pleases**

	kehendaknya/sesukanya di rumah itu.		in that house.
e.	'Ini bukan hotel! Janganlah keluar masuk **semaunya**. Pukul berapa kamu pulang tadi malam?' kata Ibu kepada Rustam.	e.	'This is not a hotel! Don't come in and out **as you please.** What time did you come home last night?' said Mother to Rustam.
f.	Dia bekerja **semaunya.**	f.	He works **when he feels like it.**

VII.G. Sentence Construction

Make a sentence with each of the following words so that the meaning is clear. The words are taken from the text in this chapter. Then give the English equivalent of each sentence.

1. istirahat
2. menegur
3. meniru
4. bekal
5. berkelok-kelok
6. cuti
7. rencana
8. peninggalan
9. tak ubahnya
10. mendaki

VII.H. Additional Exercise

Study the following passage and give the Indonesian equivalents. Do the exercise orally in class.

My daily life

At seven o'clock I get up, then I wash and dress. I go to the dining room and have my breakfast. I take my briefcase and go to the office.

At the office I work as one should, have a break for a cup of tea and then work again. Twelve thirty I have my lunch.

After lunch more work. Two hours later another break, another cup of tea. Then work for about another hour and.... home.

If I don't stop at the pub, when I get home, first of all I greet (menegur) my wife and the children, then play for a few minutes with my dog. While waiting for the news and waiting for the food to cook I have a drink of whisky and so does my wife. But she has hers in the kitchen and I have mine in the sitting room.

After the news we have dinner, then have a bit of a read....and then sleep.

That is the way life has been day after day since I married. Is this the way a life should be? Is there an alternative?

VII.I. Oral and written expression

1. I'm sure your daily life is much more interesting than the one given. Please give your own version of it in not more than 150 words in Indonesian.
2. Or imagine yourself talking to Indonesian friends in Bahasa Indonesia describing your life in Australia. You are an ocker and quite proud of it. Or you are an independent woman and very proud of your achievement. Prepare a description of your life in not more than 150 words in Indonesian for oral presentation.

VII.A. English Version

SEARCHING

Early in the morning I wake up, rush to get ready by 7 o'clock....work.
At two in the afternoon I come home, eat.... have a siesta.
Night time.... sleep.
Early morning.... wake up again.

That is the way it has always been, the same thing every day, every 24 hours, every week every month, year after year.

I must get up, must rush to get ready by seven, must work, must eat, must sleep and various other 'musts' as well. The scenario of my life for the whole 24 hours.

Life is subordinated to obligations, dictated by time.

I ask myself: 'Is this the way life really should be in this world? Life regulated by time, restricted, not being able to do as one pleases? Look at the birds, flying around, hovering in the sky, just as they please. Perching anywhere, building nests anywhere, as they choose. There is no one to forbid them, no one to discipline them, no one to keep an eye on them.... free....'

So I too set out, after first of all getting leave of absence.

Where to? Goodness knows! I ventured forth without a plan, with no particular destination, I didn't know where I would end up.

What did I want? Goodness knows! Perhaps I wanted to be like the birds.

I put a sarong and a black velvet cap into my knapsack. As it happened I still had a knapsack, a legacy from the time of the revolution. Apart from that I also put in a supply of food as provisions, among other things: corned beef, and two tins of sardines. I even took about five packets of cigarettes as well. And I didn't forget a thermos for drinking water. I slung a camera over my shoulder, just like a press photographer.

When I arrived at the station at once bought a ticket, and soon afterwards the train pulled out.

When after climbing along a winding track, the train stopped at a little station situated in the midst of a hilly region, I felt a strong urge to get off. And although, according to my ticket, I had not yet arrived at my destination, because my urge to get off was very strong, I did in fact get off there.

BAB KEDELAPAN

(Chapter VIII)

Ulangan (Revision)

VIII.A. Comprehension and Grammar

Read the following text several times. Then answer the questions given.

The dialogue in this passage is typical of the spoken language and it is necessary to develop a feeling for the rhythm and cadence of the spoken word to get the word-groupings right. Since the text is to test comprehension, to make it a challenge for the learner the wordlist is mono-lingual, and no English version is given.

KE LUAR NEGERI

'Pergi naik **haji**[1], **si**[2], Hasan, kalau memang kita sudah betul-betul sanggup,' kata ayah Hasan yang terkejut karena mendengar **hasrat**[3] Hasan yang amat sangat ke luar negeri. Padahal untuk Hasan hidup **merantau**[4] di Jakarta saja masih diongkosi ayahnya.

'Bukan ke luar negeri buat naik haji, Pak. Mau belajar!'

'Belajar?' tanya ayahnya lagi lebih heran. 'Bagaimana kau mau belajar di mana-mana, sedang belajar di sini saja sudah **ogah-ogahan.**[5] Kalau mau ke **Al Azhar**[6] paling tidak sudah harus tamat al Qur'an. Sedikit-sedikit mengerti bahasa Arab. Salahmu sendiri dulu kalau **ngaji**[7] suka **bolos.**[8]

'Siapa yang mau ke Al Azhar?'

'**Habis**[9] mau cari pelajaran apa ke luar negeri?'

Kalaupun diterangkan, tentu ayahnya tidak mengerti, maka Hasan senyum saja.

'Mau belajar apa di negeri orang, belajar jadi **orang kapir**?'[10] tanya ayahnya setengah **membentak.**[11]

'Itu..., Pak,' Hasan **gugup.**[12] Mata ayahnya memandang dia tajam-tajam, dia harus menjawab.'Belajar... itu, Pak, belajar seni...'

'Seni? Apa itu? Masa belajar yang begitu saja harus ke luar negeri?'

'Memperdalamnya harus di luar negeri.'

'Aku rasa, belum pernah aku dengar kau pernah belajar...apa, seni...di sini. Bagaimana **tahu-tahu**[13] kau mau memperdalamnya di luar negeri?' kata ayahnya sambil memandang dengan penuh **selidik,**[14] seolah ia ingin segera tahu apakah anaknya sedang membohongi dia.

'Bapak tidak tahu apa artinya **bakat,**[15] kan?' jawab Hasan dengan tekanan suara yang terasa benar bahwa ia **gemas.**[16]

Ayahnya tertunduk, tak enak hati ia. Sedih. 'Memang aku belum pernah dengar apa itu bakat. Aku orang kampung. Tapi aku kira aku tidak terlalu dungu, Hasan. Biar bagaimana juga, orang mesti belajar apa-apa dari permulaan dulu, baru memperdalam. Seperti orang gali sumur. Pernah kau lihat ada orang gali sumur tahu-tahu sudah memperdalam saja, tidak dari awal dulu?'

Menyesal sekali Hasan membicarakan hasratnya ke luar negeri tersebut pada ayahnya. Ia tahu ayahnya tidak akan mengerti dan maksud dia memberitahu, hanyalah sekedar bilang saja. Agar jangan nanti dia kaget kalau tiba-tiba saja ia harus berangkat. Ia sedang berusaha sekarang, berusaha **mati-matian**[17] untuk mendapat kesempatan diundang belajar ke luar negeri untuk bidang seni film. Dua orang kawannya **sepermainan**[18]sudah mendapat beasiswa belajar di Inggris dan Jepang. Belakangan ini anak Pasar Senen yang selalu diejek-ejeknya telah pula dikirim oleh salah satu **yayasan**[19] ke Universitas California. Mengapa dia sendiri tak mungkin bisa mendapat kesempatan serupa itu? la yakin bisa. Maka itu jauh hari ia siap-siap bilang pada ayahnya. Tapi akhirnya jadi **bertele-tele**[20] sampai ke soal gali sumur. Namun demikian dengan senang hati ia bisa memahami sikap ayahnya, ia orang kampung. Yang menyakitkan hatinya ialah, bahwa teman-teman di Pasar Senen juga tidak mau mentolerir cita-citanya ini. Terlalu!

Dikutip dari
'.... Oh, Film'
oleh Misbach Jusa Biran.

NOTES

Muslims pray five times daily. Muslims, whatever their nationality perform the ritual prayer in Arabic. These prayer times are determined by the position of the sun, not by the clock. Thus, they vary widely according to latitude and season. The clock-times given here only apply to the tropics.

1. subuh: dawn, daybreak.
   sembahyang/salat subuh: dawn prayer, around 5.00 a.m.
2. lohor: noon, midday
   sembahyang/salat lohor: noon prayer, around 12.00 p.m.
3. asar: mid-afternoon
   sembahyang/salat asar: mid-afternoon prayer, around 3.00 p.m.
4. magrib: sunset
   sembahyang/salat magrib: sunset prayer, around 6.00 p.m.
5. isya or isa: evening
   sembahyang/salat isya: evening prayer, around 7:30 p.m.

VIII.B. Wordlist

1. naik haji: pergi ke Mekah menunaikan (melakukan, melaksanakan) rukun (dasar) agama Islam yang kelima
2. si **atau** sih: agaknya, sebenarnya
3. hasrat: keinginan
4. merantau: hidup di luar daerah sendiri, pergi ke negeri lain untuk mencari penghidupan.
5. ogah-ogahan: merasa tak suka, enggan
6. Al Azhar: universitas Islam yang terkenal di Kairo
7. ngaji **atau** mengaji (-kaji): belajar membaca Qur'an dan agama
8. bolos **atau** membolos: tidak masuk sekolah (bekerja dll.) mungkin karena malas, pendeknya tidak dengan alasan yang wajar
9. habis: jadi, kalau begitu, lalu
10. orang kapir: orang yang bukan Islam
11. membentak: memarahi seseorang dengan suara keras
12. gugup: bingung, merasa agak takut
13. tahu-tahu: tiba-tiba, dengan tak diduga-duga
14. selidik: perhatian
15. bakat: sifat atau kepandaian pembawaan dari lahir
16. gemas: sangat marah/kesal dalam hati
17. mati-matian: bersungguh-sungguh
18. sepermainan: sama-sama bermain
19. yayasan: badan yang didirikan untuk tujuan sosial mengusahakan layanan dan bantuan seperti sekolah, rumah sakit, dsb.
20. bertele-tele: bercakap tak keruan

VIII.C. Comprehension

Jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan yang berikut dengan kalimat yang lengkap dalam Bahasa Indonesia.

1. Ayah Hasan mula-mula mengira anaknya mau keluar negeri bermaksud hendak mengapa?
2. Apakah syarat-syarat yang dikemukakan oleh ayah Hasan untuk seseorang yang berencana hendak belajar di universitas Al Azhar?
3. Menurut pendapat ayahnya Hasan seorang pelajar yang bagaimana?
4. Apa sebetulnya yang hendak dipelajari Hasan di luar negeri?
5. Bagaimana reaksi ayah Hasan, ketika anaknya menanyakan apakah dia tahu apa arti kata 'bakat'?
6. Setahu Hasan, berapa orang yang sudah mendapat beasiswa untuk belajar di luar negeri? Dan di negeri mana mereka belajar sekarang?
7. Apakan Hasan sendiri merasa ada harapan untuk mendapat kesempatan belajar di luar negeri? Terangkanlah dengan ringkas!
8. Ayah Hasan bagaimana orangnya?

VIII.D. Attach the particle -kah to the appropriate word in the following questions, making no other changes. Then translate each one into English.

1. Sudah berapa hari dia melarikan diri dari penjara itu?
2. Tidak setuju Anda dengan keputusan rapat itu?
3. Sendiri dia tinggal di rumah sebesar itu?
4. Saudara sedang mengapa, ketika kecelakaan itu terjadi?
5. Siapa sebenarnya yang dicurigai polisi?
6. Berapa orang yang sudah menarik diri dari partai itu?
7. Kopi atau teh yang diminta tamu itu?
8. Perlu orangtuanya diberitahu sekarang?

VIII.E. From the lists accompanying the following groups of sentence select the appropriate word for each sentence. Then translate the sentences into English.

i) **nyata, kenyataan, menyatakan, ternyata**

a. Andaikata kabar yang Anda siarkan ______________ tidak benar, bagaimana?
b. Kalau murid-murid sudah ______________ tidak mengerti, harus Sdr. terangkan lagi sampai mereka mengerti.
c. Bagaimana pun sukarnya Tuan harus menerima ______________.

ii) **ada, adalah, berada, diadakan**

a. Di mana akan ______________ pertunjukan tarian Bali?
b. Tuti, Bambang dan Minah ______________ diundangnya tetapi mereka tidak dapat datang.
c. Siapa yang mengatakan orangtua Amin termasuk orang yang ______________?

iii) **mengirimkan, berkirim-kiriman, kirimkan**

a. Sudah berapa tahun Sofyan dan Ira ______________ surat?
b. Hari apa dan tanggal berapa paket itu kamu ______________ kepada Ibu?

VIII.F. Make a sentence with each of the following pairs of words so that their meanings are clear.

1. berlari
2. berlarian
3. jauh
4. berjauhan
5. memeluk
6. berpeluk-pelukan
7. dalam
8. mendalam
9. semak
10. menyemak

VIII.G. Translate the following sentences into Indonesian using whichever of the following words is correct in the context: rusak, putus, patah, pecah

1. The eggs you bought this morning are all **broken**.
2. Don't sit on that branch! It will **break**.
3. Don't throw away that **broken** toy! It can still be fixed.
4. This pencil is no good. It **breaks** easily.
5. All communications with that country **were broken** for 24 hours.
6. The bird can't fly, because one of it's wings **is broken**.
7. This rope is very strong. Believe me, it won't **break**.
8. Unfortunately, we can't use that lift, because it **is out of order**.
9. We have to replace that **broken** plate before we leave.
10. That walking stick **broke** in two, when he hit the table with it.

VIII.H. Give the Indonesian equivalents of the following sentences, using whichever of the following words is correct in the context: diri, sendiri, pribadi.

1. In the end he **committed suicide**. It was very sad!
3. He tried a few times **to escape**, but wasn't successful.
3. 'I didn't do it for **myself**. I did it for all of you,' he said.
4. Wherever the President goes, his **private** doctor goes too.
5. Why didn't he want to go **alone**?
6. I bought that bicycle with my **own** money.
7. I don't want to hear your **personal** problems.
8. He goes everywhere by **private** plane.
9. I know him very well. My **own** father brought him up.
10. Don't blame **yourself**. Forget about it.

BAB KESEMBILAN

(Chapter IX)

IX.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)

1. Bacalah pelajaran yang di bawah ini dengan saksama. (Read the lesson below carefully.)

Mochtar Lubis is one of Indonesia's best-known journalists. This passage is taken from a lecture he gave in Jakarta in 1977, published under the title 'Manusia Indonesia' (sebuah penanggungan jawab) — Indonesian Man (a stock-taking).
In it he gives views (of the Indonesian character) in a manner both provocative and amusing. His style is lively and colloquial, reflecting his work as a journalist.

MANUSIA INDONESIA

Wajah lama sudah **tak keruan**[1] di kaca, sedang wajah baru belum jua jelas.

Siapa itu orang atau manusia Indonesia?

Apa dia memang ada?

Di mana dia?

Seperti apa **gerangan**[2] **tampang**nya[3]?

Yang lelaki, apa gerangan benar gagah **perkasa**[4], **satria**[5] **sejati**,[6] **tampan**[7] dan **keren**,[8] campuran Arjuna dan Gatotkaca, seorang satria-**pendeta**[9] atau **malahan**[10] **ratu**[11] pendeta?

Dan manusia yang **cewek**nya[12] Srikandikah, dengan kecantikannya yang dilukiskan orang Melayu dengan kata-kata:... rambutnya seperti mayang berurai, alis matanya bagai lebah beriring, bibirnya mekar delima, betisnya bagai padi bertelur?

Ataukah lukisan yang berikut **mengandung**[13] pula satu kebenaran: Dua orang ahli sosiologi **berdebat**[14] tentang **Nabi**[15] Adam dan **Siti**[16] Hawa. Persoalan yang mereka perdebatkan ialah Nabi Adam dan Siti Hawa itu bangsa apa, atau orang apa.

Yang seorang mengatakan: 'Tentunya orang **Mesir.**'[17]

'**Goblok**[18] kamu,' kata yang seorang lagi. 'Mesir di jaman itu belum lahir.'

'Ah, tentunya orang Yahudi.'

'Mana bisa, **balas**[19] temannya, orang Yahudi itu **timbul**[20] dengan Nabi Ibrahim.'

'Yah, kalau begitu saya **yakin**[21] **mestinya**[22] orang Indonesia.'

'Apa **alasan**mu?'[23] tanya temannya.

'Yah coba lihat, kan Nabi Adam dan Siti Hawa hanya **memiliki**[24] satu **buah Khuldi,**[25], seekor ular, malahan mereka tak punya baju sama sekali dan toh mereka **menyangka**[26] bahwa mereka berada di sorga atau Taman Firdaus.'

'Ataukah benar pendapat **cukong-cukong**[27] yang kini **merajalela**[28] di negeri kita, bahwa manusia Indonesia itu dapat dilukiskan dengan hanya tiga jari tangan saja, seperti INI!' (Dia menggeserkan tiga jari, jari empu, jari telunjuk, jari tengah).

Benar atau tidak, saya serahkan lagi pada hadirin semua untuk **mempertimbangkan**nya.[29]

Saya sendiri **meragukan**[30] kebenarannya, meskipun saya mendapat kesempatan untuk membuktikannya, tetapi saya **mundur**,[31] karena **sangsi**.[32]

Ceritanya begini: Pada suatu kali saya naik kapal terbang ke luar negeri. Di depan saya duduk dua orang asing, kulit putih, sedang berbincang-bincang dengan asyik. Karena pesawat udara sudah meninggalkan wilayah teritorial Republik Indonesia, wah, mereka bicara **lancang**[33] sekali. Yang seorang menceritakan betapa dia meninggalkan Indonesia untuk sementara karena sudah bosan terlalu lama tinggal di hotel, menunggu-nunggu segala rupa izin dan persetujuan untuk penanaman modalnya.

' Berapa lama kamu sudah menunggu?' tanya kawannya berbincang.

'Aduh, sudah empat bulan, **menjelang**[34] bulan ke lima,' sahutnya.

'Ah, kamu salah. Kamu tak tahu bahwa di Jakarta itu uang **memperlancar**[35] segalanya.... you know,' tambahnya, 'you can buy everybody in Jakarta.'

'Wah, **buseet**.'[36] Darah naik ke kepala saya. Saya kan penduduk Jakarta juga. Ini **penghinaan**[37] luar biasa. **Naluri**[38] saya menyuruh saya berdiri, dan **menampar**[39] si mulut lancang **bule**[40] itu. Tetapi pikiran saya berkata, 'Kalau saya tampar, dan dia tidak mau terima, **lantas**[41] **mengadukan**[42] saya ke **pengadilan**,[43] lantas bagaimana? Kalau saya kalah perkara, karena buktinya lebih kuat dari bukti saya, kan bisa **berabe**.'[44]

Jadinya saya **urut**[45] dada saya, bersabar.

Nah, apa benar apa tidak, **pandangan**[46]orang asing itu terhadap kita di Jakarta ini, juga saya serahkan pada Saudara-saudara semua.

Cultural Notes

i. The conventional description of a girl's beauty in older Malay literature that the author refers to is the following:

a. **Rambutnya seperti mayang berurai /mengurai.**
Her hair is like an unfolding palm blossom.
An expression used to describe long beautiful hair;
'mayang' means palm blossom;
'berurai' or 'mengurai' both mean unfold.

b. **Alis matanya bagai semut beriring.**
Her eyebrows are like ants in procession.
i.e. Her eyebrows are black and beautifully shaped;
'semut' means ant(s);
'beriring' means in a procession.

c. **Bibirnya delima merkah/merekah.**
Her lips are like ripe pomegranates.
i.e. Her lips are red like rubies;
'delima' means pomegranate;
'merkah' or 'merekah' means split open, cracked open, burst open (of buds).
or: Bibirnya mekar delima; (see text)
'mekar' means to open up or blossom.
This expression too has the same idea used to describe beautiful red lips.

d. **Betisnya bagai padi bunting.**
Her calves are shapely like pregnant padi stems.
Padi stems swell before the grains form and appear.
In other words the calves have a beautiful shape and are not like sticks.'Betis' means calf and 'bunting' means pregnant.

e. A further common simile which does not need much imagination to grasp is:
Matanya seperti bintang timur.
Her eyes are like the eastern star.
i.e. Her eyes are bright and gleaming.

The author has deliberately mixed some of the similes for humorous satirical effect by saying that her eyebrows are like bees in procession (instead of the, fine black line of a procession of ants) and that her calves are like padi stems filled with eggs (instead of swelling gently as the grain rice forms.)
In addition he has, deliberately and quite incongruously, attributed to Srikandi, wife of a Javanese culture hero, the stock description of a Malay beauty!
Does he mean to say that there is no one way of describing an Indonesian male or female? Or that the Indonesians too are uncertain as to how to describe themselves?

ii. Nabi Ibrahim i.e. Abraham. In the Muslim tradition Abraham is a prophet, 'nabi'. In the Judae-Christian tradition he is a Patriarch, the ancestor of the twelve tribes of Israel.

IX.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words, to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts.

1. tak keruan: indistinct
2. gerangan: possibly, can it be (wondering, expressing doubt)
3. tampang: seed, seedling, breed, heredity, characteristic
Seperti apa gerangan

tampangnya?: What sort of breed can he/she be?

4. perkasa: courageous, bold
5. satria: knight
6. sejati: real, true, genuine
7. tampan: smart, stylish, handsome
8. keren: striking, handsome
9. pendeta: religious scholar
10. malahan: rather
11. ratu: here means king, usually it means queen
12. cewek: girl, girlfriend, female; dan manusia yang ceweknya: and the character's female counterpart
13. mengandung: to contain
14. berdebat: to debate
15. nabi: prophet
16. Siti: title for a woman of high lineage; Siti Hawa: Eve
17. Mesir: Egypt, Egyptian
18. goblok: stupid
19. balas: answer, reply
20. timbul: to appear, rise, emerge
21. yakin: sure, certain, convinced, to believe
22. mestinya: it must be
23. alasan: reason, basis, grounds
24. memiliki: to possess
25. buah Khuldi: the eternal fruit, i.e. a Muslim expression, the apple eaten by Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden
26. menyangka: to think, expect, suppose, suspect
27. cukong-cukong: Chinese business sharks
28. merajalela: to operate unchecked, be at large, be out of control
29. mempertimbangkan: to consider, take into account, think about, weighing the pros and cons
30. meragukan: to doubt, be doubtful, dubious
31. mundur: to retreat
32. sangsi: not sure, unsure, dubious, doubtful
33. lancang: impudent, insolent, sharp tongued
34. menjelang: toward, approaching
35. memperlancar: to speed up
36. 'buseet': more common 'buset', originally comes from 'bullshit' a 'legacy' from the Raffles era (1812-16) when Java was under British military occupation
37. penghinaan: insult, humiliation
38. naluri: instinct
39. menampar: to slap someone (across the face)
40. bule: white person, si mulut lancang bule itu: that big mouthed whitey
41. lantas: then, right away, straight away
42. mengadukan: to lodge a complaint, take someone to court
43. pengadilan: court
44. berabe: nuisance, difficult, complicated; 'kan bisa berabe': 'wouldn't I be in trouble?'
45. urut, mengurut: to massage, stroke; Jadinya saya urut dada saya, bersabar: I just restrained myself and let it pass (lit: be patient).
46. pandangan: opinion,view

IX.C. Comprehension

Sesudah mempelajari bacaan bab IX, jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan yang berikut dengan kalimat yang lengkap dalam Bahasa Indonesia.

1. Apa si 'Saya' jelas melukiskan bagaimana rupa dan watak 'manusia Indonesia?'.Terangkanlah dengan ringkas.
2. Dalam kesusasteraan Melayu lama, bagaimana biasanya orang melukiskan perempuan yang cantik dari hal rambut, bibir dan mata?
3. Apakah alasan yang diberikan oleh seorang dari sosiologi itu, ketika dia memutuskan bahwa Nabi Adam dan Siti Hawa itu adalah orang Indonesia?
4. Cukong-cukong di Indonesia menganggap orang Indonesia bagaimana?
5. Apakah si 'Saya' setuju dengan pendapat cukong-cukong itu? Apakah si 'Saya' menyatakan pendapatnya?
6. Siapa yang mengatakan bahwa di Jakarta ada korupsi? Bagaimana si 'Saya' tahu?
7. Apa yang dinyatakan oleh si 'Saya' dalam dua paragraf yang akhir? Terangkanlah dengan kata-kata Anda sendiri.
8. Sukakah Anda teks ini? Suka atau tidak terangkanlah dengan ringkas.

IX.D. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

Ulangan dan Tambahan

(Revision and Development)

We have learnt that in Bahasa Indonesia the **adjective follows the noun as in** sentences a) and b), but there are some exceptions. Note **the position of the adjectives** in the following sentences and their English translations. When these adjectives **precede** the nouns they modify, there is little change in meaning.

a. Kepada siapa akan kauberikan **pakaian bekas** itu?

a. To whom are you going to give those **secondhand clothes?**

b. Hidup dalam masyarakat ini tidak boleh memikirkan diri sendiri saja, kita juga harus memikirkan kepentingan **orang lain.**

b. Living in a community we may not think solely of ourselves, we must also think of **other people** (others).

Orang lain and **lain orang** both mean **other people** or **someone else,** but the former often refers to people with whom one has no connection.

c. Janganlah tiap kali dia saja yang dipilih menjadi ketua; berilah kesempatan kepada **lain orang.**

c. Don't choose just him every time as chairman; give **someone else** an opportunity.

d. Sebuah tongkat kayu

d. A wooden stick (was) stuck in

	Indonesian		English
	ditancapkan dalam **bekas lobang** mata air itu. (see text Chapter 4)		the **former source** of the spring.
e.	Rohana, guru kami adalah **bekas istri** Tuan Suparman.	e.	Rohana, our teacher is a **former wife** of Mr Suparman.
f.	Benarkah bahwa Hadi **bakal menantu** Nyonya Harun?	f.	Is it true that Hadi is the **future son-in-law** of Mrs Harun?
g.	Siapa-siapakah yang terpilih menjadi **calon presiden?**	g.	Who were the ones chosen to be **presidential candidates?**
h.	**Lain kali** kalau Anda sakit beritahulah saya.	h.	**Another time** when you are sick, let me know.
i.	Janganlah kejam **sesama manusia**.	i.	Don't be cruel to your **fellow men.**
j.	**Sesama mereka,** tentu mereka berbicara (dalam) bahasa Jawa.	j.	**Among themselves,** of course they speak Javanese.
k.	Karena dia keturunan raja-raja, dia tidak boleh kawin dengan **sembarang orang.**	k.	Because he is of royal descent he can't marry **just anyone. (any person)**
l.	Dia bukan **sembarang orang**.	l.	She is not **just anyone.**
m.	Jangan makan di **sembarang tempat.**	m.	Don't eat **just anywhere.**
n.	Jangan beri dia **sembarang buku** untuk dibaca.	n.	Don't give him **just any books** to read.

IX.D. Exercises

Terjemahkanlah kalimat-kalimat pertanyaan yang berikut ke dalam Bahasa Indonesia.(Translate the following interrogative sentences into Indonesian.)

a. Does that shop only sell secondhand clothes?
b. Is it true that he can't marry just anyone?
c. What did Mrs Harun's ex-husband do for a living?
d. Is Rustam's future wife an Australian?
e. Have you ever thought of helping other people?
f. Why was he so cruel to (his) fellow men?
g. Are you going to let Minah go to the party with someone else?
h. Have you been introduced to the prospective chairman?

IX.E. Penggunaan Bahasa (Language Usage)

1. Pahamkanlah pemakaian kata **gerangan** dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. (Note the use of the word **gerangan** in the following sentences.) **Gerangan** is used in combination with a question word to express puzzlement or uncertainty.

a.	Anak siapa dia **gerangan**?	a.	Whose child **could** she be?
b.	Berapa **gerangan** umur perempuan itu?	b.	How old **could** the woman be?
c.	Di mana **gerangan** saya bertemu/ketemu dengan dia dulu? Saya sudah lupa.	c.	Where **could** I have met him before? (Where on **earth** did I meet him before?) I have forgotten.
d.	Dari siapa **gerangan** surat itu? Tidak ada tanda tangan.	d.	From whom **might** that letter be? There is no signature.
e.	Apakah **gerangan** maksudnya untuk datang ke sini?	e.	What **could** his purpose be in coming over here?
f.	Benarkah **gerangan** kabar itu?	f.	Is there **possibly** any truth in that news? (**Could** there be some truth in that news?)
g.	Sudah kerasankah **gerangan** mereka di Indonesia?	g.	**Could** they already feel at home in Indonesia?
h.	Apa **gerangan** penyakitnya?	h.	What **could** be wrong with her? (lit: What **could** her disease be?)

Remarks:
The word **gerangan** usually follows the word or idea being queried.

IX.E. Exercises
Form five additional interrogative sentences of your own using the word **gerangan.**

IX.F. Penggunaan kata dan ungkapan (Use of Words and Phrases)
Perhatikanlah bentuk dan arti kata-kata yang dicetak tebal dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. Kemudian kuasailah kalimat-kalimat itu. (Observe carefully the form and the meaning of the words in bold type in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.)

1. benar: correct, right, true, very

a.	Kiraan itu **benar**, sekitar 50.000 orang yang meng-anggur sekarang.	a.	That estimate is **correct**, around 50,000 people are unemployed now.
b.	Ternyata **benar** sekarang, betapa sukarnya bagi anak-anak muda (untuk) mendapat pekerjaan.	b.	It is **very** obvious now how difficult it is for the young to get work.
c.	Tindakan pemerintah itu tidak **benar**; banyak orang	c.	That action of the government is not **fair**; many people are

	Indonesian		English
	menderita karenanya.		suffering because of it.
d.	Apa cerita itu **benar** atau tidak, saya tidak tahu.	d.	Whether the story is **true** or not, I don't know.
e.	Yang Anda katakan tentu ada **benar**nya, tetapi tidak semua orang mau menerimanya.	e.	There is certainly some **truth** in what you say, but not everyone will accept it.
f.	Saya **benar-benar** berterima kasih atas semua pertolongan dan kebaikan Saudara.	f.	I am **sincerely** thankful for all your help and kindness.
g.	Dia **benar-benar** mau menolong.	g.	He **really** wants to help.
h.	Itu **benar-benar** terjadi.	h.	It **truly** happened.
i.	Untuk **membenarkan** kesalahan-kesalahan dalam buku itu akan (me)makan banyak waktu.	i.	**To correct** (put right) the mistakes in that book will take a lot of time.
j.	Guru tidak **membenarkan** perbuatan Udin, tetapi beliau tidak dapat berbuat apa-apa.	j.	The teacher didn't **approve** of what Udin had done, but there was nothing he could do.
k.	Sekarang sudah terbukti **kebenaran** yang diperjuangkannya selama ini.	k.	Now the **truth** of what he has been struggling for all this time has been proved.
l.	Sulit mempertanggungjawabkan **kebenaran** cerita-cerita seperti itu.	l.	It is difficult to vouch for the **truth** of stories like that.
m.	**Sebenarnya** hal itu sudah lama saya ketahui.	m.	**Actually** I have known about that matter for a long time.
n.	Anak kecil biasanya jujur, selalu mengatakan **yang sebenarnya.**	n.	Little children are usually honest, they always tell **the truth.**
o.	Katakanlah **yang sebenarnya! Benar atau tidak** kamu mengisap ganja?	o.	Tell **the truth! Did** you **or did** you **not**, smoke hashish?

IX.F. Exercises

From the list accompanying the following group of sentences, select the appropriate word for each sentence, then translate the sentences into English.

benar, benar-benar, sebenarnya, kebenaran, membenarkan

a. Dia kecewa _______________, ketika diberitahu bahwa lowongan sudah diisi oleh orang lain.

b. Dia takut mengatakan yang _____________ kepada Ibu.
c. _____________ saya yang bertanggung jawab atas kekalahan kita.
d. Percayalah! Orang banyak tidak akan _____________ pendapat Saudara itu.
e. Dia berjuang untuk _____________, keadilan dan cara hidup Amerika.
f. Dia masih kecil, belum tahu membedakan yang _____________ dengan yang salah.
g. Sukar untuk mengetahui keadaan yang _____________ di daerah itu sekarang.
h. Sekarang baru dia _____________ kabar itu. Memang dia akan minta berhenti.
i. Itu tidak _____________! Janganlah dengarkan cerita seperti itu!
j. Saya _____________ mau belajar dengan rajin tahun ini.

IX.G. Perhatikanlah **bentuk** dan **arti** kata-kata yang dicetak tebal dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. Kemudian kuasailah kalimat-kalimat itu. (Observe carefully the form and the meaning of the words in bold in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.)
tuju, menuju: toward(s), in the direction of, to aim at (target), make/head for (place).
bertujuan: to intend, have purpose
menujukan: to aim something at s.t. or at s.o, to direct.

a.	Mereka **menuju** ibu kota.	a.	They **headed for** the capital city.
b.	Setelah beberapa jam berjalan, tibalah mereka **di tempat yang dituju.**	b.	After walking for several hours they reached their **destination.**
c.	Siapa gerangan yang **dituju** dengan perkataan 'pembohong' itu?	c.	Who could possibly **be referred to** by that word 'liar'?
d.	Marilah kita sama-sama berusaha dan bekerja keras **menuju** perbaikan nasib kaum buruh.	d.	Let us together make an effort and work hard **towards** improving the lot of the worker.
e.	Penjahat itu **menujukan** pistolnya kepada salah seorang karyawan bank.	e.	The criminal **aimed** his gun at one of the bank employees.
f.	Professor itu **menujukan** pembicaraannya kepada mahasiswa-mahasiswa yang baru.	f.	The professor **directed** his speech to the new students.
g.	Mata semua orang yang hadir	g.	The eyes of all people present

	tertuju kepada pembicara itu.		**focused** on the speaker.
h.	Pembicaraan itu **tertuju/ ditujukan** pada masalah kaum ibu.	h.	The discussion was **directed** to the women's issues.
i.	Apakah **tujuan** mereka datang ke sini?	i.	What is their **intention** in coming here?
j.	Sebelum saya masuk perkumpulan itu, saya harus tahu asas dan **tujuan**nya.	j.	Before I join that organisation I must know its principles and its **aims**.
k.	Dari sini Saudara **bertujuan** ke mana?	k.	From here where will you **be heading for**?
l.	Itulah yang dikerjakannya sehari-hari, hidupnya tidak **bertujuan** seperti kehilangan pedoman.	l.	Those are the things she does all day long, her life **has** no **purpose** as if she has lost her sense of direction.
m.	Dia ada **bertujuan** untuk menyelesaikan sekolahnya.	m.	He did **intend** to finish his schooling.
n.	Saya tidak **setuju dengan** pendapat Saudara.	n.	I don't **agree with** your opinion.
o.	Mereka sangat **setuju dengan** usul Amin.	o.	They **agreed** wholeheartedly **with** Amin's proposal.
p.	Saya sama sekali tidak dapat **menyetujui** pendapat dan tindakanmu.	p.	I can't **agree** at all **with** your opinion and your action.
q.	Pengeluaran itu **sudah disetujui**kah oleh kepala jawatan?	q.	**Has** the expenditure **been approved** by the head of the department?
r.	Majikan dan pihak buruh telah mencapai **persetujuan** mengenai kenaikan gaji.	r.	The employers and the worker's representatives have reached **an agreement** concerning an increase in salary.
s.	Dia sudah terlalu lama tinggal di hotel, menunggu-nunggu segala rupa izin dan **persetujuan** untuk penanaman modal.	s.	He had been staying too long in a hotel, waiting and waiting for all kinds of permits and **approvals** to invest his capital.

IX.G. Exercises

From the list accompanying the following group of sentences select the appropriate word for each sentence, then translate the sentences into English.

a. menuju, menujukan, dituju, ditujukan, tertuju, bertujuan, tujuan

1. Dia berangkat dengan tidak memberitahukan tempat yang_____________.

2. Saya lihat mobil itu ______________ ke selatan.
3. Tahukah Saudara siapa yang ______________ oleh pembicara dengan kata 'pendusta'?
4. Guru-guru harus berusaha bersama-sama dan bekerja keras untuk ______________ perbaikan dalam pendidikan.
5. Kali ini pidatonya ______________ kepada siapa dan mengenai apa?
6. Semua perhatian ______________ pada pemilihan calon presiden.
7. Apakah ______________ Saudara untuk mengadakan rapat dengan tiba-tiba?
8. Latihan yang diberikan kepada anak-anak itu ______________ menurut bakatnya masing-masing.
9. Dia ______________ untuk melanjutkan sekolahnya di luar negeri.
10. Mata Amin ______________ kepada gadis yang cantik yang duduk di sudut di ruang tamu itu.

b. Select the appropriate word for each sentence, then translate the sentences into English.

setuju, menyetujui, disetujui, persetujuan.

1. Kami tidak meminta ______________ Saudara.
2. Kalau Saudara tidak ______________ dengan pendapat saya, ya, tidak apa.
3. Semua yang hadir dalam rapat ______________ usul Saudara Rustam.
4. Perkawinannya tidak ______________ oleh orang tuanya.
5. Sekarang kami hanya menunggu ______________ dari kepala jawatan.

IX.H. Mengemukakan buah fikiran secara lisan maupun tulisan (Oral and Written Expression)

Prepare a short description in Indonesian (not more than 150 words) of a typical Australian man or woman — if there is such a thing — using the vocabulary and expressions you have learned so far.

IX.A. English Version

THE INDONESIAN CHARACTER

The old face has become indistinct in the mirror, while the new one is also still not clear.

Who is this person, this Indonesian?
Does he really exist?
Where is he?
What sort of breed can he/she be?

The male, is he really brave and bold, a true knight, handsome and striking, a mixture of Arjuna and Gatotkaca, of knight and religious scholar, or even of king and religious scholar?

And the character's female counterpart (the female of the species)? Is she a heroine with her beauty as described by the Malays in the words: . Her hair like spreading palm blossoms, her eyebrows like bees in procession, her lips like a split pomegranate, the calf of her leg like pregnant rice stalks ?.

Or how about the following description? Is there an element of truth in it?

Two sociologists were debating about Adam and Eve. The question they were arguing about was, what race of people were Adam and Eve?

One said, 'They must have been Egyptians.'

'You idiot,' said the other. 'Egypt hadn't come into existence then.'

'Well then, they must have been Jewish.'

'How could that be?' asked his friend, 'the Jewish people appeared with **nabi** Ibrahim.'

'Oh, in that case, then I'm sure they must have been Indonesians.'

'For what reason?' inquired his friend.

'Well look, didn't Adam and Eve possess only an apple and a snake; they didn't even have any clothes, yet they thought they were in heaven or the Garden of Eden.'

'Or is the opinion of the Chinese business sharks at large in our country true, that Indonesians can be summed up with three fingers of one hand, like THIS! (not being quite normal).

True or not, I leave it up to you the audience to decide.

I myself doubt its truth, although I had an opportunity to prove that it was not the case, but I gave up the idea, because I was dubious. The story goes like this.

Once I travelled by plane to go overseas. In front of me sat two foreigners, Europeans, deep in conversation. Because the aircraft was leaving Indonesian airspace, how insolent their remarks were! One said that he was leaving Indonesia for a while because he was fed up with having stayed so long in a hotel, and waiting for all kinds of permits and approvals to invest his capital.

'How long have you been waiting?' asked his companion.

'Ah, four months already, now it is approaching the fifth month' he replied.

'Ah, it's your fault. You don't know that in Jakarta money speeds everything up . . . you know,' he added, 'you can buy everybody in Jakarta.'

'What bullshit!' My blood boiled. After all I too am a resident of Jakarta. This was a terrible insult. My instincts urged me to get up and slap the big mouthed whitey. But my reason advised me: If I slapped him across the face and he didn't take it quietly, and took me to court, what then? If I lost the case, because his evidence was stronger than mine, wouldn't I be in trouble?'

So I restrained myself and let it pass. Now, whether the opinion of those foreigners concerning us Jakartans is true or not, I leave it up to you to decide.

BAB KESEPULUH

(Chapter X)

X.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)
Bacalah pelajaran di bawah ini dengan saksama.(Read the lesson below carefully.)

PELAYAN ELEVATOR

'Tingkat sebelas,' kataku, setelah seperti biasa **menabik**[1] dulu.

Sambil tetap duduk di atas sebuah bangku kecil di **pojok**[2] elevator itu, pelayannya **menekan**[3] sebuah **kenop**,[4] dan elevator mulailah bergerak naik ke atas. Sudah sering aku menggunakan elevator itu, dan pelayan itu pun sudah tahu tingkat berapa yang kutuju. Kadang-kadang sambil **meluncur**[5] ke atas atau turun ke bawah, apabila tidak ada orang lain, kami bercakap-cakap sedikit, tapi cuma beberapa kata saja di belakang kalimat-kalimat rutine seperti **how are you today** atau **nice morning today**, dan sebagainya. Cuma beberapa kata, tetapi ternyata sudah cukup untuk lebih mendekatkan dia kepadaku. Dan kata-kata itu hanya merupakan keterangan-keterangan **singkat**[6] tentang dirinya sendiri. Demikianlah dari jawaban-jawaban singkat itu aku tahu, bahwa ia adalah seorang bekas anggauta angkatan laut Belanda yang sejak tujuh tahun yang lalu pindah ke Australia.

'Negeri Belanda sudah terlalu padat,' katanya 'tiada **ruangan**[7] lagi untuk **bernafas**[8] bagiku.'

Pada kesempatan lain ia menerangkan, bahwa ia sudah menjadi warga negara Australia dan sudah kawin dengan seorang gadis dari kota Brisbane. Demikianlah sedikit demi sedikit tiap kali ada kesempatan aku bertanya, ia memberikan keterangan **seperlunya.**[9]

Orangnya gagah, tampan, **memancarkan**[10] **sinar kecerdasan otak**[11] sangat simpatik. **Kutaksir**[12] umurnya tak kan lebih dari tiga puluh tiga. Aku sering bertanya dalam hati, mengapa orang yang begitu gagah dan muda dan **nampaknya**[13] tidak bodoh itu, hanya menjadi seorang pelayan elevator. 'Pekerjaannya tentu sangat **menjemukan**,'[14] pikirku. Tiap hari, **kecuali**[15] pada hari-hari libur, tiada lain kerjanya selama delapan jam harus **terkurung**[16] dalam suatu ruangan kecil berbentuk kubus yang besarnya 2 x 2 x 2 meter itu, menekan kenop untuk meluncurkan elevator ke atas kalau ada orang yang mau naik, atau ke bawah kalau ada yang mau turun, begitulah saja **tak henti-hentinya,**[17] turun-naik, turun-naik saja. Dan anehnya lagi, ia tak pernah kulihat **bangkit**[18] dari tempat duduknya itu, seolah **terpaku**[19] pada bangku kecil itu. Tidakkah **kesal**,[20] tidakkah **pegal**,[21] tidakkah **kaku**[22] untuk kakinya duduk berjam-jam begitu? Dan yang menambah berat lagi,

adakah kesempatan baginya untuk baca-baca buku atau koran, karena nampaknya elevator itu bukan main sibuknya digunakan orang turun-naik. Dan merokok? Sama sekali tidak **diperkenankan**[23] dalam elevator itu.

Aku merasa sayang, dia begitu kuat, begitu muda, dan tampan pula. Apakah di kota Sydney yang begitu besar itu tidak ada pekerjaan lain yang lebih **sesuai**[24] baginya?

'Berapa lama Saudara sudah bekerja sebagai pelayan elevator ini?' tanyaku pada suatu kesempatan lagi.

'Lima tahun, Tuan,' jawabnya, sambil menekan kenop untuk meluncurkan aku ke atas.

'Lima tahun . . . ?' Aku **kaget.**[25]. Tidak jemu?'

Dia hanya tersenyum. Dan sambil **tengadah,**[26] katanya: 'Ah, Tuan, bagi orang semacam aku kejemuan itu **tidak boleh dihiraukan benar**.'[27]

Beberapa hari kemudian barulah aku mengerti. Pada suatu sore, ketika tiba saatnya bagi dia untuk pulang, kulihat seorang wanita keluar dari dalam sebuah garderobe yang letaknya hanya beberapa langkah saja dari tempat elevator itu, lalu **menyodorkan**[28] sepasang **kayu topang**[29] kepada pelayan itu, yang kemudian dengan melompat-lompat menghilang di dalam arus manusia yang **berduyun-duyun**[30] keluar dari kantor-kantor dan toko-toko besar.

Sejak itu maka setiap kali aku berada dalam elevator itu aku sering kali bertanya dalam hati: Apakah ada kejemuan, kalau penyerahan **mutlak**[31] kepada **nasib**[32] sudah memberi kesanggupan kepadanya untuk menerima kejemuan itu sebagai rutine hidup biasa yang harus dijalani dan dialaminya tiap hari tanpa pilihan lain? Yah, apakah baginya kemenangan yang lebih besar daripada penyerahan seperti itu . . .?

Dia seorang invalid — **remuk**[33] kaki kanannya dalam perang melawan Hitler.

Dikutip dari '**Kesan dan Kenangan**'
oleh Achdiat K. Mihardja.

X.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts.

1. menabik: to greet, say hullo
2. pojok: corner
3. menekan: to press, suppress, oppress
4. kenop: button, switch
5. meluncur: to slide, move smoothly
6. singkat: brief, short
7. ruangan: space, room, hall
8. bernafas (bernapas): to breathe

9. seperlunya: the necessary, in moderation
10. memancarkan: to radiate, broadcast
11. sinar kecerdasan otak: a gleam (sparkling) of intelligence
12. kutaksir: I guessed, estimated
13. nampaknya: apparently, obviously, evidently
14. menjemukan: boring, tiresome
15. kecuali: except for
16. terkurung: cooped up, caged
17. tak henti-hentinya: ceaselessly, endlessly
18: bangkit: to get up, rise
19. terpaku: fastened, nailed
20. kesal: frustrated
21. pegal: stiff and aching
22. kaku: stiff and unbending, awkward, clumsy
23. memperkenankan: to permit, allow
24. sesuai: suitable
25. kaget: astonished, amazed
26. tengadah: looking up
27. tidak boleh dihiraukan benar: can't take too much notice
28. menyodorkan: to pass, hand s.t.
29. kayu topang: crutches
30. berduyun-duyun: to throng, crowd
31. mutlak: complete, absolute
32. nasib: fate
33. remuk: shattered, crushed, smashed

X.C. Comprehension

Jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan di bawah ini dalam Bahasa Indonesia dengan kalimat yang lengkap. (Answer the questions below in Indonesian with full sentences.)

1. Cerita pendek ini tentang siapa ?
2. Di kota manakah cerita ini terjadi? Dari kalimat mana Saudara tahu?
3. Mengapa si 'Aku' biasanya hanya dapat bercakap-cakap sebentar saja dengan tokoh dalam cerita ini?
4. Dari manakah asal pelayan elevator itu? Mengapa dia pindah ke Australia?
5. Apa yang sama sekali tidak boleh dilakukan dalam elevator itu?
6. Bagaimana si 'Aku' tahu bahwa pelayan itu seorang invalid?
7. Kalau ceritera ini terjadi pada tahun 1956, tahun berapa pelayan itu pindah ke Australia?
8. Terangkanlah dengan ringkas bagaimana orangnya, pelayan elevator itu.

X.D. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

X.D.1 Observe carefully the forms which consist of **tak/belum+ duplicated root + nya** in the following sentences and note their meanings.

a. 'Begitulah saja, saya **tak (ber)henti-hentinya** turun-	a. 'That is just how it is, I am **endlessly** going up and down

	naik, turun-naik,' kata pelayan elevator itu.		up and down,' said the lift attendant.
b.	Paman **tak (ber)henti-hentinya** merokok.	b.	Uncle **never stops** smoking. or: Uncle smokes **ceaselessly.**
c.	Pembantu itu **tak (ber)henti-hentinya** bekerja dari jam 6 pagi sampai jam 10 malam.	c.	That servant **doesn't stop** working from 6 in the morning until 10 at night.
d.	Dogol **tidak jera-jeranya** menipu, mencuri, meskipun dia sudah berkali-kali dihukum penjara.	d.	Dogol **still dares** to cheat and steal, even though he has been sentenced to prison time and time again.
e.	**Belum jera-jeranyakah** kamu? Hentikanlah meng-isap ganja!	e.	**Haven't** you **learnt your lesson yet?** Give up smok-ing pot!
f.	Pemuda-pemudi itu **tak puas-puasnya** berdansa. Mereka berdansa sampai pagi.	f.	The young ones **just couldn't get enough** dancing. They danced till morning.
g.	Dia begitu cantik dan menga-syikkan; **tak puas-puasnya** orang **memandanginya**.	g.	She is so beautiful and fascinating. People **can't take their eyes off her.**
h.	Mereka **tidak bosan-bosannya** makan tempe dan tahu. Tiap hari mereka makan tempe atau tahu.	h.	They **never get tired** of eating soya bean cake and soya bean curd.They. eat them every day.
i.	**Tidak bosan-bosannyakah** anak-anak itu mendengarkan cerita itu-itu juga?	i.	**Don't** the children **ever get tired** of listening to just the same stories?
j.	Dia **tidak jemu-jemu**nya bekerja untuk lembaga itu.	j.	He **never gets weary** of working for that institution. He works **tirelessly** for that institution.
k.	Ratna **tidak jemu-jemunya** berlatih. Enam sampai tujuh jam dia main piano tiap hari.	k.	Ratna practices **tirelessly**. She plays the piano six to seven hours a day.
l.	Pak Joyo **tidak jemu-jemunya** merawat istrinya yang sakit. Dia sendiri sudah tua pula.	l.	Pak Joyo **tirelessly** nurses his invalid (sick) wife. He himself is elderly too.
m.	Amat, kalau kamu tidak sungguh-sungguh belajar, sekolahmu **tak akan selesai-selesainya.**	m.	Amat, if you don't study seriously your schooling **will never be finished.**
n.	Kenapa Tuti **belum-sembuh-sembuhnya** juga? Sudah lama dia sakit. Apa penyakitnya?	n.	Why does Tuti **still not get any better?** She has been ill for a very long time. What is her illness?

X.D.1. Remarks:
The adverbial construction **tidak/tak/belum + duplicated root + nya** means the persistence or continuation of a state or action opposite to that indicated by the root.
Note however that in examples a), b) and c) **ber-** may be affixed to the root **henti** with no difference in meaning.

X.D.1. Exercises
Form questions to which the following sentences could be the answer. Use the adverbial construction: **tidak/tak/belum + duplicated root + nya** in each question. Possible questions are given as a guide; form questions of your own!

a. Tuti menangis saja tadi malam, sebab dia sakit gigi.
   Mengapa Tuti **tak henti-hentinya** menangis tadi malam?
b. Sebenarnya Dogol kleptoman.
   Dogol ditangkap polisi lagi? **Belum jera-jeranya** dia mencuri?
c. Bambang, Hadi, Anwar dan cewek mereka yang berdansa sampai jauh malam itu.
   Siapa yang **tidak bosan-bosannya** berdansa sampai jauh malam itu?
d. Tidak, mereka suka sekali tempe dan tahu dan lagi harganya tidak semahal daging.
   Tidak bosan-bosannyakah mereka makan tempe dan tahu tiap hari?
e. Udin pemalas dan sering bolos sekolah.
   Kenapa sekolah Udin **tidak selesai-selesainya?**
f. Mungkin Suarni tidak mau berobat.
   Mengapa penyakit Suarni **belum sembuh-sembuhnya** juga?

X.D.2 Observe carefully **the forms** which consist **of root + me-verb** in the following sentences and note their **meanings**.

a. Kalau soal **jahit-menjahit** jangan berikan kepada saya. Saya sama sekali tidak bisa menjahit.

a. If it is **anything to do with sewing**, don't give it to me. I can't sew at all.

b. Bila Bapak akan pindah rumah? Kami mau menolong. Urusan **angkat-mengangkat** serahkan kepada kami yang muda-muda.

b. When are you going to move house? We want to help. **Any lifting there is to do** leave to us young ones.

c. Kalau Saudara mau tahu tentang **tari-menari**, hubungi Ratna. Dia sudah bertahun-tahun mempelajari

c. If you want to know **anything about dancing**, get in touch with Ratna. She has been studying Balinese, Javanese,

	tarian Bali, Jawa, Sunda dsb.		Sundanese dancing, etc. for years.
d.	Di kursus itu diajarkan **tenun-menenun, lukis-melukis** dan **pahat-memahat.**	d.	In that course they teach **everything to do with weaving, painting** and **sculpting.**
e.	Dia banyak tahu tentang **masak-memasak.**	e.	She knows a great deal about **the art of cooking** (anything to do with cooking).
f.	Kalau soal **beli-membeli** perkakas rumah, saya serahkan kepada istri saya.	f.	If it is **anything to do with buying** furniture, I leave it to my wife.
g.	Buku yang dibelikan Ayah mengenai **karang-mengarang**. Beliau tahu saya suka sekali mengarang.	g.	The book which father bought for me is all about **composition.** He knows I like writing very much.
h.	Sekretarisnya sedikit sekali tahu tentang **ketik-mengetik** atau **surat-menyurat.** Barangkali dia belum berpengalaman.	h.	His secretary knows very little about (**anything to do with) typing** or **correspondence.** Perhaps she hasn't had much experience.

X.D.2. Remarks:
Forms which consist of **root + me-verb** in the examples given, usually mean **the activity** indicated by **the verb, together with the knowledge or skill it involves.**

X.D.2. Exercises
Answer the following questions in Bahasa Indonesia. Use the construction which consists of **root + me-verb** in each answer. Possible answers are given as a guide. Form original answers of your own.

a. Apa yang kamu bicarakan dengan Rohana?
    Banyak yang kami bicarakan, antara lain soal **jahit-menjahit.**

b. Siapa yang akan menolong kita mengosongkan ruangan itu? Kursi-kursi dan meja-meja itu agak berat?
    Urusan **angkat-mengangkat** saya serahkan kepada Rustam, Anwar, dan Sofyan.

c. Tahukah Sdr. siapa yang bisa saya hubungi untuk menanyakan sedikit tentang tarian Bali?
    Kalau mengenai **tari-menari,** Ratna yang harus Anda hubungi.

d. Mengapa kursus itu populer sekali? Apa yang diajarkan di sana?
    Di kursus itu diajarkan **tenun-menenun, lukis-melukis** dan **pahat-memahat.**

e. Segala macam makanan yang disajikan di pesta itu enak. Siapa yang memasaknya?

Nyonya Harun, dia memang ahli dalam hal **masak-memasak.**

f. Tuan Harun, barang-barang seperti perkakas rumah, mahalkah di sini?
Saya tidak tahu, soal **beli-membeli** perkakas rumah istri saya lebih banyak tahu.

g. Buku apa yang Sdr. baca itu? Tebal sekali!
Ini buku tentang **karang-mengarang.**

h. Apa tugas seorang sekretaris pribadi?
Banyak tugasnya. Yang sudah jelas dia harus bertanggung jawab tentang **surat-menyurat.**

i. Tuti, siapa yang bisa menolong saya mengetik ceramah saya ini? Saya tidak bisa mengetik.
Di kantor ini, kalau soal **ketik-mengetik,** saya yang mengerjakan. Mari saya tolong!

j. Dia mau mengikuti kursus apa?
Dia mau mengikuti kursus **jahit-menjahit.**

X.D.3. Note that with **some verbs, this construction, i.e. root + me-verb, may** indicate that **the activity** denoted by the verb **is reciprocal** with **the suggestion that it is repeated or continuous.** Note also the use of the word **saling** with **me-verb** in the following sentences. This indicates **reciprocity**.

a. Janganlah selalu **curiga-mencurigai/saling mencurigai.**	a. Don't always **be suspicious of each other.**
b. Mereka teman baik dan **percaya-mempercayai/saling mempercayai.**	b. They are good friends and they **trust each other.**
c. Dengarkanlah anak-anak itu! Kenapa mereka selalu suka **atas-mengatasi/saling mengatasi?**	c. Listen to those children. Why do they like **outdoing each** other?
d. Saya lihat Hasan dan Udin berkelahi; **sampai pukul-memukul/saling memukul.** Hidung Udin berdarah.	d. I saw Hasan and Udin quarrelling; **they came to blows.** Udin got a bleeding nose.
e. Minah dan saya sudah bertahun-tahun bertetangga. Kami selalu **tolong-menolong/saling menolong.**	e. Minah and I have been neighbours for years. We always **help each other.**

X.D.3. Exercises

Read carefully the following complete sentences and work out their meanings. Using **the same root** as that of the **verb in bold**, provide a different form of the verb to complete the sentence which follows. The

meaning of the **completed sentences** should be **the same as that** of **the preceding one.** (See also IV.D.3.)

a. i. Polisi dan penjahat itu **tembak-menembak** selama 15 menit.
   ii. Polisi dan penjahat itu ____________ selama 15 menit.
b. i. Mengapa mereka tidak **percaya-mempercayai?**
   ii. Mengapa mereka tidak **saling** ____________?
c. i. Di kota besar tetangga sama tetangga jarang bertemu, apalagi **tolong-menolong**.
   ii. Di kota besar tetangga sama tetangga jarang bertemu, apalagi ____________.
d. i. 'Bertengkar boleh, tetapi jangan sampai **berpukul-pukulan,'** kata guru.
   ii. 'Bertengkar boleh, tetapi jangan sampai ____________,' kata guru.
e. i. Kedua karyawan itu cocok sekali mereka bekerja sama dan **harga-menghargai**.
   ii. Kedua pekerja itu cocok sekali, mereka bekerja sama dan **saling** ____________.

X.D.4. In the following examples, the meaning of the **root + me-verb construction does not fit into either of the previous two categories, and** each is best learnt individually (as an item).
Note that in sentences e) and f) the form is **turun-temurun** not **turun-menurun.**

a. Siapa mengatakan bahwa penyakit itu **pindah-memindah?**
a. Who said that the disease is **contagious?**

b. Janganlah **terus-menerus** minta uang kepada orang-tuamu.
b. Don't **continuously** ask your parents for money.

c. Mengenai hal itu kami **tidak tahu-menahu.**
c. We **didn't know anything** in relation to that matter.

d. Dia **tidak mau tahu-menahu** dengan orang tua-nya lagi.
d. He **doesn't want to have anything to do** any more with his parents.

e. Apakah penyakit itu **turun-temurun?**
e. Is that disease **hereditary?**

f. Keris itu adalah pusaka keluarga yang **turun-temurun** sudah 200 tahun.
f. That kris is a family heirloom that **has passed from generation to generation** for 200 years.

g. Rumah Pak Amin dapat diselamatkan, tetapi rumah **sebelah-menyebelah** habis terbakar.
g. Pak Amin's house was saved, but the houses **on either side** (or: **around it**) were burnt to the ground.

X.E. Penggunaan Bahasa (Language Usage)
Penggunaan kata dan ungkapan (Use of words and phrases)

1. Note the meaning of the word **berat** used by itself and in set phrases in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.

	Indonesian		English
a.	Kopor ini tidak **berat**, biar saya yang membawanya.	a.	This suitcase isn't **heavy**; let me carry it.
b.	Berapa kilo **berat** bayi itu sekarang? Naikkah atau turunkah beratnya?	b.	How **heavy** is that baby now? Is it gaining or losing weight?
c.	Hukuman itu saya rasa terlalu **berat** untuk kesalahan sekecil itu.	c.	I think that penalty is too **severe/heavy** for an offence as small as that.
d.	Apa yang menambah **berat** pekerjaan pelayan elevator itu?	d.	What made the work of the lift-attendant more **difficult/ troublesome**?
e.	Hanya prajurit yang **luka berat**/parah saja yang diangkut dengan helikopter.	e.	Only **seriously wounded** soldiers were transported by helicopter.
f.	Sebenarnya **berat hatiku** (untuk) meninggalkan keluarga, walaupun hanya untuk sebulan.	f.	Actually **I am reluctant/ heavy hearted** to leave the family, even though it is only for a month.
g.	**Terasa berat** lidahku untuk mengeluarkan perasaanku.	g.	**I find it difficult** to express my feelings.(lit: **It is difficult for my tongue** to express my feelings.)
h.	Saya tidak (**ber**)**keberat-an** kalau dia tinggal di sini sampai dia dapat rumah.	h.	I have no **objection** if he stays here until he gets a house.
i.	**Berat dugaan** saya bahwa keputusan yang **berat sebelah** itu diambilnya dengan tergesa-gesa.	i.	I have **the impression** that he took that **biased** decision hurriedly. Or: I have a **strong suspicion** . . .
j.	Bapak harus adil! Janganlah **berat sebelah!**	j.	You must be fair! Don't **be biased!/take sides!**

X.E.1. Translation Exercises (Latihan Terjemahan)

Give the Indonesian equivalents of the following sentences, using the word 'berat'.

a. I can't carry this sack of rice (karung berisi beras) by myself. It is very **heavy**.

b. How **heavy** are you now, Mother?
c. Why do you think (anggap) the punishment was too **severe**? He killed his wife, didn't he?
d. How much does he pay you a week? Is your work **heavy**?
e. Is the arm of the **seriously** wounded soldier to be amputated? (to amputate: memotong)
f. Why are you **reluctant** to sack (memecat) her?
g. I **find it difficult** to say that she is wrong.
h. I don't **have** any **objection** at all.
i. Anyone who **has objections**, please raise your hands.
j. As chairman of the party, he should not be **biased**.

X.E.2. Note **the use** and **the meaning** of the word **sesuai and its derivatives** in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.
sesuai: suitable, to fit, agree, suit.

a. Apakah di kota Sydney yang begitu besar itu tidak ada pekerjaan lain yang lebih **sesuai** baginya?	a. In a city as big as Sydney wasn't there any work more **suitable** for him?
b Kemeja Bapak **sesuai** (pas) di badan Rustam.	b. Father's shirt **fits** Rustam.
c. Carilah anak kunci yang **sesuai** dengan kunci laci itu.	c. Look for the key that **fits** the lock of this drawer.
d. Obat ini tidak **sesuai** de-ngan saya, terlalu keras.	d. This medicine doesn't **agree** with me, it is too strong.
e. Mereka akan diberi peker-jaan yang **sesuai** dengan ketrampilan masing-masing.	e. They are going to be given work that **suits** their respective skills.
f. 'Pandai-pandailah **menyesuaikan diri** di kampung orang' kata Nenek ketika melepas Rohana di lapangan terbang.	f. 'Do your best to **adapt your-self** when you are away from home (in different places, surroundings and company)' said Grandma when she was seeing Rohana off at the airport.
g. Tidak selalu mudah **menye-suaikan diri** dengan adat orang di tempat yang baru.	g. It is not always easy to **adapt oneself** to people's custom in a new place.
h. Dia **pandai menyesuai-kan diri.**	h. He is **an adaptable person.**
i. Mereka tidak selalu **berse-**	i. They don't always **agree with**

	suaian paham.		**each other.** (They occasionally disagree on grounds of principle.)
j.	Paham orang tua dan paham anak-anak muda sekarang sering tak **bersesuaian.**	j.	The views of the older generation are often not **in agreement** with those of the younger generation.

X.E.2. Translation Exercises (Latihan Terjemahan)
Give the Indonesian equivalents of the following sentences, using the word 'sesuai' or its derivatives.

a. Have you **agreed** on the date yet? We have to decide today.
b. The climate here doesn't **agree** with him. He wants to move to the coast.
c. These shoes don't **fit** (my feet.) They are too small.
d. I must **fit** my holidays in with my children's.
e. Is your friend an **adaptable** person?
f. When you go to a new country to live, you must **adapt** yourself to new customs.
g. His story doesn't **agree** with what I had heard.
h. They haven't come to an **agreement** yet concerning the rent of the house.

X.F. Peribahasa (Proverbs)
Untuk direnungkan (to reflect on)

i. **Berat** sama dipikul ringan sama dijinjing.
Do everything together, whether difficult or easy (heavy or light).
Note: **memikul**: to carry, s.t. on the shoulders, to shoulder, to bear
menjinjing: to carry, s.t. light dangling in one's hand.
ii. Betapa **berat** mata memandang, **berat** juga bahu memikul.
No matter how hard it is for the person who sees misfortune, it is harder still for the one who endures it.

X.A. English Version

LIFT ATTENDANT

'Eleventh floor,' I said, after saying hullo first as usual.

While staying seated on a small stool in the corner of the lift, the operator pressed a button, and the lift started moving upwards. I had often used the lift, and the operator already knew which floor I was going to. Sometimes, when going up or coming down, if there was no one else, we chatted a little, but only a few words after routine expressions such as 'How are you today', or 'Nice morning today', and the like. Only a few words, but obviously

enough to make him a bit closer to me. And those few words were only brief statements about himself. Thus it was from those brief answers that I learnt that he was a former member of the Dutch navy, who had migrated to Australia seven years before.

'Holland is too over-crowded.' he said, 'for me there is no longer space to breathe.'

On another occasion he explained that he had become an Australian citizen, and had married a girl from Brisbane. Thus, little by little, every time there was a chance for me to ask, he gave me the necessary information.

He was well-built, handsome, with a gleam (sparkling) of intelligence, and very friendly. I guessed his age as being no more than thirty-three. I often asked myself why that man, so well-built, young, and apparently not stupid, was only a lift attendant. His job must be very boring, I thought. Every day, except for holidays (days off), he did nothing else for eight hours a day— cooped up inside a small cubicle 2 x 2 x 2 metres— but to press a button to send the lift up, if people wished to go up, or down, if there were some who wanted to go down; just that, endlessly, up and down, up and down. And strangely enough, I never saw him get up from his seat, as though he was fastened to the little stool. Wasn't he frustrated, didn't he ache, weren't his legs stiff, sitting for hours like that?

And what was even worse, was there any chance for him to read books or a newspaper, because evidently the lift was constantly being used by people going up and down. And smoking? It was absolutely forbidden in the lift.

I felt pity! He was so strong, so young and handsome! In a city as big as Sydney wasn't there any work more suitable for him?

'How long have you worked as a lift attendant?' I asked him on another occasion.

'Five years, Sir,' he answered, pressing the button to take me up.

'Five years . . .?' I was astonished. 'Don't you get bored?' He only smiled. And looking up he said: 'Ah, Sir, someone like me can't take too much notice of boredom.'

It was only a few days later that I understood. One afternoon when it was time for him to go home, I saw a woman come out from a cloak-room only a little way from the lift, and pass a pair of crutches to the attendant, who then hobbled away and vanished into the stream of people that was coming out in throngs from the offices and the big department stores.

Since then, every time I have been in that lift I have often asked myself: Does boredom exist, if a complete surrender to fate has given him the ability to accept that boredom as a normal routine of life that has to be endured and experienced without an alternative? Indeed, and was there any greater victory for him than a surrender such as that . . .?

He was a cripple — his right leg was shattered in the war against Hitler.

BAB KESEBELAS

(Chapter XI)

XI.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)

Bacalah pelajaran yang di bawah ini dengan saksama.
(Read the lesson below carefully.)

CITA-CITA SEORANG WARTAWAN

'Homo est animal ridens.' Manusia adalah binatang yang bisa ketawa, demikian kata seorang **filsuf**[1] Romawi. Manusia-manusia tidak perlu **sakit hati.**[2] Pada kenyataannya manusia memang kadang-kadang lebih bodoh daripada binatang.

Bagiku manusia tidak hanya binatang yang bisa ketawa, tetapi adalah binatang yang paling pandai **sekaligus**[3] **pandir,**[4] paling cantik sekaligus banyak **cacat.**[5] Manusia adalah binatang — bagi yang **berhati halus**[6] baiklah kusebut makhluk sebagai alternatif, yang paling menarik untuk **diamati**[7]. Tontonan yang lebih **mencengkam**[8] daripada sirkus, lebih menggairahkan daripada barisan bukit di **pinggir**[9] danau, lebih **rumit**[10] daripada susunan komputer.

Dia bisa **merayu-rayu,**[11] tetapi juga bisa **kejam**[12] membunuh sesamanya. Dia bisa **taat**[13] seperti seekor **bebek**[14] tetapi juga bisa berontak **bagaikan**[15] **kerbau**[16] **gila**[17] **mendengus-dengus.**[18] Dia bisa juga ketawa tanpa mengerti sebabnya. Matanya bisa **nanar**[19] **menatap**[20] ke depan tanpa melihat barang yang ada di mukanya. Telinganya bisa berdiri **menampung**[21] **arus-arus**[22] kata tanpa mengerti artinya. Karena itu manusia adalah binatang atau makhluk (untuk yang berhati halus) yang paling menarik untuk dibahas dan **dikisahkan.**[23]

Misalnya: Pernah aku ikut **berjejal-jejal**[24] bersama manusia-manusia mendengarkan **laporan**[25] seorang Pak lurah kepada Bupati: '. . . **kelurahan**[26] kami **mencatat**[27] **kemajuan**[28] dalam Pelita I (Pembangunan Lima Tahun I) ini. **Panenan**[29] berhasil baik, perumahan rakyat bertambah. Tak ada lagi penduduk kelurahan yang **tuna wisma.**'[30] Manusia-manusia **bertepuk tangan.**[31] Kemudian mereka pulang meninggalkan halaman kelurahan dengan kepala **manggut-manggut**[32] tanda setuju. Mata mereka tak melihat gubuk-gubuk **reyot**[33] di pinggir jalanan yang mereka lalui. Seolah-olah gubuk-gubuk itu adalah **biasan**[34] jalanan dan penghuninya adalah makhluk-makhluk yang berasal dari dunia lain yang tak perlu **dihiraukan.**[35]

Aku jadi terheran-heran penuh tanda tanya. Ada sesuatu yang tidak beres dalam mekanik organisme yang disebut manusia itu. Ada **kortsluiting**[36] antara mata, telinga dengan komputer **otak**nya![37]

TONTONAN MENCEKAM

Hal-hal inilah yang menyentuh hatiku yang **peka.**[38]

Aku ingin menuliskan mengenai binatang yang paling **aneh**[39] ini. Aku ingin mengisahkan 'tontonan yang paling mencekam'. Aku ingin **menyambung**[40] kabel penghubung mata, telinga dan otak. Aku ingin seluruh mekanik organisme manusia ini melakukan fungsinya dengan sadar. Yang paling penting, aku ingin tulisanku dibaca oleh mata-mata itu dan **disalurkan**[41] ke komputer otaknya. Karena itulah aku memutuskan menjadi wartawan, meskipun aku mendapat tawaran kerja di banyak tempat. Aku ingin jadi wartawan, yang mengamati sumber warta, yaitu di manusia sendiri, animal ridens, binatang yang bisa ketawa.

Ternyata pekerjaan yang kupilih benar-benar memberikan kepuasan batin yang besar kepadaku. Tetapi tidak hanya itu. Aku masih merasakan **efek sampingan**[42] yang menggembirakan. Kecuali gaji yang lewat kassa perusahaan, kadang-kadang melayang juga amplop-amplop tak dikenal. Memang aneh manusia-manusia ini. Mereka kadang-kadang mau menggantikan kabel penyambung mataku ke otakku dengan spare-parts asing yang dinamakan "uang". Tetapi seperti biasa keanehan kadang-kadang menyenangkan tetapi kadang-kadang juga membuat muka merah.

Bagaimanapun juga hidupku sebagai wartawan penuh dengan kegairahan. Setiap pagi **hatiku tegang**[43] ingin cepat-cepat **menyaksikan**[44] wajah hasil kerjaku. Setiap pagi kurasakan kepuasan dan kebanggaan. Kepuasan dan kerbanggaan ini untungnya lebih besar dari kekecewaan pada sore harinya, bila kulihat koranku digunakan untuk bungkus kacang. Tidak apalah! Besok pagi dunia akan bisa menyaksikan karyaku yang baru lagi.

R. Haryo Saputro wartawan 'Suara Karya', Jakarta,
dikutip dari: **Profil Wartawan Indonesia**,
dikumpulkan dan disusun oleh Rosihan Anwar.

XI.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts. Please familiarise yourself with this list before reading the text.

1. filsuf: philosopher
2. sakit hati: annoyed, irritated, resentful
3. sekaligus: at the same time
4. pandir: stupid
5. cacat: physical defect, shortcoming, imperfection
6. berhati halus: sensitive, easily offended
7. mengamati: to watch closely, observe, examine
8. mencengkam or mencekam: to grip, seize
9. pinggir: edge
10. rumit: hard, difficult, complicated, complex
11. merayu-(-rayu): to flatter, seduce, persuade, deceive
12. kejam: cruel
13. taat: faithful

14. bebek: duck
15. bagaikan: as if, like
16. kerbau: buffalo
17. gila: mad, crazy, insane
18. mendengus(-dengus): to snort
19. nanar: dazed, confused, angry
20. menatap: observe intently, peer at
21. menampung: to prick up one's ears, catch
22. arus(-arus): the flow, current
23. mengisahkan: to relate, tell or write stories about
24. berjejal(-jejal): to crowd
25. laporan: report
26. kelurahan: administrative district
27. mencatat: to jot down, make a note of, chalk up s.t.
28. kemajuan: progress
29. panen(an): harvest
30. tuna wisma: homeless
31. bertepuk tangan: to clap, applaud
32. manggut-manggut = mengangguk-angguk: to nod
33. reyot: dilapidated, ramshackle
34. biasan: reflection, extension, fragment
35. menghiraukan: to pay attention, to heed
36. kortsluiting: a short-circuit
37. otaknya: his brain
38 peka: sensitive
39. aneh: extraordinary, strange, odd
40. menyambung: to connect, link up, join
41. menyalurkan: to channel, lead into, disalurkan: conveyed
42. efek sampingan: side effects
43. hatiku tegang: I am keyed up
44. menyaksikan: to see, witness

XI.C. Comprehension

Jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan di bawah ini dengan kalimat yang **lengkap** dalam Bahasa Indonesia.
(Answer the questions below in Indonesian with **full** sentences.)

1. Apakah yang dikatakan seorang filsuf/filosof Romawi mengenai manusia ?
2. Si "Aku" setuju dengan pendapat filosof itu dan malah menambahkan pendapatnya sendiri mengenai manusia. Apakah yang dikatakannya?
3. Ceritakanlah kembali dengan kata-kata Anda sendiri yang dilaporkan oleh Pak Lurah mengenai Pelita I kepada Bupati.
4. Apakah sebabnya si "Aku" heran dan penuh tanda tanya melihat hadirin bertepuk tangan dan mengangguk-angguk tanda setuju setelah mendengarkan laporan Pak Lurah itu?
5. Apakah yang dimaksud oleh si "Aku" dengan kalimat yang berbunyi: 'Ada kortsluiting antara mata, telinga dengan komputer otaknya.'
6. Apakah alasan yang diberikan oleh si "Aku" mengapa dia memutuskan untuk menjadi wartawan?

7. Dia mendapat kepuasan batin dari pekerjaannya. Kadang-kadang dia menerima apa yang membuat dia gembira atau adakalanya membuat mukanya merah? Terangkanlah!
8. Tiap pagi si "Aku" puas dan bangga membaca hasil kerjanya, tetapi sore harinya dia kecewa. Apa yang membuatnya kecewa?

XI.D. Tata Bahasa (Grammar)
Ulangan dan tambahan (Revision and Development)

1. We already know that nouns derived with **pe- + root** indicate the **person performing the action** (see Bahasa Indonesia, Langkah Baru, Book One 11.11.A.&B.)

e.g: a) Siapa **penulis** buku itu? — Who is **the writer** of that book?
b) Siapa **pengirim** surat itu? — Who is the **sender** of that letter?

XI.D.2. This derived form **(pe- + root)** may also indicate **the instrument** or **means** by which the action is performed.
e.g: **pembuka kaleng:** can opener; **penyaring teh**: tea strainer
In some context, however, these derivatives are best expressed in English by **a verbal construction.**
Study the following sentences, observing carefully the **form** and **meaning** of the words in bold type; then master the sentences.

a.	Aku ingin menyambung kabel **penghubung** mata, telinga dan otak. (taken from the text)	a.	I want to link up the cable **connecting** eye, ear and brain.
b.	Mereka kadang-kadang mau menggantikan kabel **pe-nyambung** mataku ke otakku dengan 'spare-parts' asing yang dinamakan 'uang'. (taken from the text)	b.	They sometimes want to replace the cable **connecting** my eyes to my brain with foreign spare-parts called 'money'.
c.	Balutlah lukamu itu! Kamu ada kain yang bersih **pem-balut** luka itu?	c.	Put a bandage on your wound. Do you have a clean piece of cloth **to use as a bandage?** (...**to bandage** that wound?)
d.	Ini tongkat yang kupakai **pemukul** ular itu.	d.	This is the stick I used **to hit** the snake.
e.	Kita tidak ada uang **pemba-yar** sewa rumah?	e.	Don't we have money **to pay** the rent for the house?
f.	Tolong ambilkan saya sepo-tong tali **pengikat** paket ini.	f.	Please get me a piece of string **to tie** up this parcel.
g.	Plastikkah atau daun pisang-	g.	Is Mother going to use plastic

	kah yang akan Ibu pakai **pembungkus** makanan itu?		or banana leaves **to wrap up** that food?
h.	Ini air **pencuci** tangan Bapak.	h.	Here is some water **to wash** your hands.
i.	'Sudah pernahkah kamu sekalian melihat mesin **pembuat** roti?' tanya guru kepada murid-murid.	i.	'Have you ever seen a machine **for making** bread?' the teacher asked the pupils.
j.	**Sebagai penutup** marilah kita menyanyikan lagu kebangsaan.	j.	**To conclude**, let us sing the national anthem.

Note again that Indonesian **nouns of this type** usually need to be translated into English with **a verbal construction**.

XI.D.3. Study the following sentences, observing carefully **the form** and **meaning** of the words in bold type.

a.	Apakah dia **pemarah?**	a.	Is she **quick tempered?**
b.	Dia bukan **orang yang pemarah.**		She isn't a **quick tempered person.**
c.	Biasanya dia **tidak pemarah.**	c.	She **isn't** usually **quick tempered.**
d.	Dia **penangis sekali.**	d.	She **cries easily (easily moved to tears).**
e.	**Si penidur itu** masih belum bangun.	e.	**That sleepy head** still hasn't got up.

Remarks:
The **pe- + root** form in these examples denotes a **characteristic quality** or **feature of behaviour of a person.** It has an **adjectival character.** This adjectival character is shown by the fact that these derivatives (**pe- + root** form) may be followed by the adverb **sekali** as a modifier, or preceded by **si** in its function as a nominaliser.
The **pe- + root** form in this category may qualify a preceding noun with or without **yang**, as may any other adjective.

XI.D.1.&.3. Exercises
In the following sentences the **pe- + root** form indicates a person performing an action (XI.C.1), or a characteristic habit of a person behaving in a way indicated by the root (XI.C.3).
Translate the sentences into English paying special attention to this difference. Use a dictionary for unfamiliar words.

a. Tuan inspektur polisi itu sudah biasa berurusan dengan **perampok, pencuri** dan **penipu** yang licin.

b. Oh, Tuhan yang **pengasih** dan **penyayang,** ampunilah dosaku!
c. Murid-murid meminta kepala sekolah menjadi **penasihat** dalam melaksanakan proyek mereka tahun ini.
d. Ke mana saja dia bepergian, **pengawal**nya tentu ikut.
e. Pramugari itu **penyabar** dan **peramah** sekali kelihatan.
f. Di kapal terbang orang yang **perokok** ditempatkan di ruangan yang tersendiri.
g. **Pengail** itu menggunakan udang atau cacing untuk umpan.
h. Nenek **pemakan sirih;** kalau Ibu pergi ke pasar beliau tidak lupa membelikan Nenek sirih dan tembakau.
i. Sebagai seorang **pendidik,** dia harus memberi contoh yang baik.
j. Pemuda-pemuda dari daerah itu banyak yang menjadi **pedagang** dan **pelayar.**

XI.D.1.2.&.3. Exercises

The following are additional examples of **pe- + root** derivatives illustrating the three categories that have just been explained.
Make sentences with two words from each category and give English equivalents for each sentence.

Category i. **petani, pelayan, pembaca, pekerja, pengurus**
Category ii. **pembayar, penggoreng, penggali, pembuka, penyaring, pembalut**
Category iii. **pemalas, pemalu, pengopi, penakut, pelupa, pemarah**

Whether a particular **pe + root** form belongs to one or another of these categories may sometimes only be clear from the context.
For example: a) **Pengganti** (category i) guru sejarah kelas III belum datang.
b) Saya harus membayar 10 dolar, **pengganti** (category ii.) buku sejarah yang hilang.

XI.E. Additional Exercises

From the list accompanying the following group of sentences select the appropriate word for each sentence. Then translate the sentences into English. Use a dictionary for unfamiliar words.

1. **hubungan, berhubung, penghubung, berhubungan, dihubungkan**

a. ____________dengan kekurangan air di daerah itu, terpaksa diadakan pembatasan pemakaian air.
b. Apakah perkara ini ada ____________nya dengan pembunuhan minggu yang lalu?
c. Jembatan ____________desa A dengan desa B dirusakkan banjir.

d. Desa A dengan desa B____________oleh sebuah jembatan gantung.
e. Kedua perkara itu terbukti ____________.
f. 'Segala alat pancaindera itu ____________dengan otak,' kata guru.

2. **membalut, pembalut, dibalut, membalutkan, dibalutkannya**

a. Lukamu harus ____________, biar tidak kena kotoran.
b. Ambillah secarik kain yang bersih ____________luka itu.
c. Ibu ____________ kain yang bersih itu pada luka Minah.
d. Selendang itu ____________pada lehernya. Cantik sekali dia kelihatan.
e. Juru rawat itu mengajar kami bagaimana ____________ jari,tangan, lengan, kepala dan sebagainya.

3. **ikat, diikat, mengikatkan, pengikat, terikat**

a. Dia sama sekali tidak dapat bergerak, karena kaki dan tangannya ____________dengan tali.
b. Warna ____________ pinggangnya hitam dan terbuat dari kulit ular.
c. 'Saya tidak mau kawin, karena saya tidak mau ____________,' kata Ratna.
d. Saya mau membeli pita yang bagus ____________ kado ini.
e. Ali ____________kambingnya pada sebuah pohon di padang rumput tidak jauh dari rumahnya.

XI.F. Penggunaan bahasa (Language Usage)

1. Pahamkanlah pemakaian kata **suatu** dan **sesuatu** dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. (Note the use of the words **suatu** and **sesuatu** in the following sentences.)

a. Itu adalah **suatu** keharusan.	a. That is a must.
b. Pada **suatu** hari kami dibawa guru melihat pertunjukan wayang kulit.	b. One day our teacher took us to see a 'wayang kulit' performance.
c. Ini adalah **suatu** kesempatan yang sudah lama saya tunggu-tunggu.	c. This is an opponunity that I have waited for, for a long time.
d. Mereka sedang membicarakan **suatu** soal yang pelik.	d. They are discussing a complex issue.
e. Mereka sedang membicarakan **sesuatu** yang pelik.	e. They are discussing **something** complex.
f. Ratna tidak banyak bicara hari ini. Barangkali ada **sesuatu** yang menyusahkannya.	f. Ratna isn't talking much today. Perhaps there is **something** worrying her.

g. Ada **sesuatu** yang tidak beres dalam mekanik organisme yang disebut manusia itu. (taken from the text)

g. There is **something** that isn't right in the functioning of the organism called man.

h. Masyarakat menganggap bahwa wartawan umumnya banyak tahu tentang **segala sesuatu.**

h. The community thinks that journalists in general know **a** lot about **all kinds of things.**

i. Tuhan Yang Maha Esa menciptakan **segala sesuatu** yang ada di dunia.

i. It is Almighty God, who created **everything** that exists in this world.

XI.F.1. Remarks

Suatu may be thought of as an indefinite article used with abstract nouns.

XI.F.2. Note the meaning of the word **satu** used by itself and in set phrases in the following sentences.

a. Pertanyaan saya kepada Anda hanya **satu**: apakah yang mendorong Anda menjadi wartawan?

a. I have only **one** question to ask you: what made you become a journalist?

b. **Salah satu** di antara amplop-amplop itu berisi uang.

b. **One of** those envelopes contains money.

c. Periksalah kopor dan tas mereka **satu-satu/satu per satu.**

c. Examine their suitcases and bags **one by one.**

d. Di kota itu tidak banyak restoran yang baik, hanya **satu-satu.**

d. There aren't many good restaurants in that city, only **very few.**

e. Dialah **satu-satunya** pemimpin yang tak jemu-jemunya mencurahkan perhatian dan tenaganya untuk kesejahteraan rakyat.

e. He is **the only** leader, who tirelessly devotes his attention and energy to the well-being the people.

f. Itulah **satu-satunya** toko buku yang menjual buku-buku dalam bahasa asing.

f. That is **the only** bookshop which sells books in foreign languages.

XI.F.3. Note the meaning of the word **kali** used **by itself** and **in set phrases** in the following sentences.

a. **Kali ini** mereka berlibur di Bali, **lain kali** mereka beren-

a. **This time** (on this occasion) they are taking a holiday in Bali.

cana mau ke Eropah.

Another time they are planning to go to Europe.

b. Amin merokok di kelas. Dia ditegur oleh guru tidak **seka-li**, tetapi sudah **berkali-kali**.

b. Amin smoked in the class. He was spoken to by the teacher not **once**, but **many times.**

c. **Sekali-sekali** saya minum bir, lebih-lebih kalau hari panas.

c. **Occasionally** I drink beer, especially if the weather is hot.

d. Bagiku manusia tidak hanya binatang yang bisa ketawa, tetapi adalah binatang yang paling pandai **sekaligus** pan-dir, paling cantik **sekaligus** banyak cacat.
(taken from the text)

d. To my mind man is not only an animal who can laugh, but is the most intelligent animal and **at the same time** the most stupid, the most beautiful and **at the** same time the one with the most imperfections.

e. Uang sekolah anaknya seta-hun ribuan rupiah dan harus dibayar **sekaligus**.

e. His child's annual school fee is thousands of rupiah, and has to be paid **all at once.**

f. **Jangan sekali-kali** melang-gar peraturan itu.

f. **Never, never** disobey this regulation.

g. Saya **sama sekali tidak** mengerti.

g. **I don't** understand **at all.**

h. Dia sengaja duduk di bela-kang **sekali.**

h. He deliberately sat at the **very** back.

i. **Sekalipun** sakit, dia pergi juga bekerja.

i. **Even though** he is ill, he still goes to work.

XI.F.4. Note **the use** and **the meaning** of the word **tarik** and its **derivatives** in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.
tarik, menarik: to pull, draw, interesting, attractive

a. Di Indonesia , kerbau dan sapi (jantan) masih banyak dipakai untuk **menarik** gerobak sebagai alat pengang-kutan untuk jarak dekat.

a. In Indonesia, buffaloes and bullocks are still widely used to **pull** (farm) carts as a means of transportation over short distances.

b. Nelayan-nelayan itu **me-narik** perahunya ke darat.

b. The fishermen **pulled** their boats onto the shore.

c. Apa yang **menarik** orang untuk berduyun-duyun me-ngunjungi tempat itu?

c. What is it that **attracts** people to visit that place in throngs?

d. Manusia adalah makhluk yang paling **menarik** untuk

d. Mankind is the most **interest-ing** creature to study.

	diamati (taken from the text).		
e.	Suaranya dan gerak-gerik-nya dalam penyajian nya-nyiannya **menarik** sekali.	e.	Her voice and movements in the presentation of her songs are very **attractive.**
f.	Penyanyi cilik itu pandai sekali **menarik hati** penonton.	f.	That young singer is very good at **winning the hearts** of the audience.
g.	Menjelang pemilihan umum tiap-tiap partai memakai berbagai cara untuk **mena-rik** hati rakyat supaya me-nyokongnya.	g.	Towards the general election, every party uses various means **to attract** the people, so that they will support it.
h.	Tingkah laku yang aneh dan cara pemuda itu berpa-kaian yang **menarik perha-tian** tetangganya.	h.	It is the young man's strange behaviour and his way of dressing that **attracts** his neighbour's **attention.**
i.	Sdr. tentu bisa **menarik** kesimpulan kepada siapa dia berpihak sesudah membaca artikelnya itu.	i.	You can certainly **draw a conclusion** as to whose side he is on after reading his article.
j.	Beberapa kali kudengar dia **menarik** nafas panjang, seolah-olah ada sesuatu yang disusahkannya.	j.	Several times I heard him **draw** a deep breath, as though there was something worrying him.
k.	Saya sama sekali tidak **ter-tarik** pada musik pop yang keras dan ribut.	k.	I am not in the least attracted to harsh and noisy pop music.
l.	Janganlah lekas **tertarik** pada janji yang muluk-muluk.	l.	Don't be quickly **attracted** (taken in) by extravagant promises.
m.	Banyak pendengar yang **tertarik** oleh suara penyiar radio yang lemah lembut itu.	m.	Many listeners **were attracted** by the soft gentle voice of the radio announcer.
n.	Hadi sudah lama **tertarik** kepada Minah.	n.	Hadi has been **attracted** to Minah for a long time.

XI.F.1.2.3&4. Exercises

After studying thoroughly sections XI.D. 1, 2, 3 and 4, translate the following sentences into Indonesian.

a. That was **an** event that we cannot forget.
b. There is **something** important I want to tell you.
c. That was **the only** dictionary in that shop.

d. I can't manage (sanggup) to pay Rp 10.000,00 **all at once.**
e. Look, she's laughing and crying **at the same time.**
f. **I don't** understand him **at all.** He is a difficult person to understand.
g. They don't want to sit in the **very** front.
h. The old farmer **pulled** a cart filled with coconuts to the market.
i. I began **to be interested** in politics when I was 15 years old.
j. I don't need to tell you about that organisation; you can **draw** your own conclusions.

X1.G. Mengemukakan buah fikiran secara lisan maupun tulisan. (Oral and Written Expression)
Every day you come into contact with journalists: on TV, radio and through the press.
Write a brief essay of about 150 words in Indonesian on this topic:
Apa yang dikatakan wartawan — tugasnya , kewajibannya dan pengaruhnya.
(What a journalist is — his work, responsibility and influence.)

XI.A. English Version

IDEALS OF A JOURNALIST

'Homo est animal ridens'. Man is an animal that can laugh. Thus said a Roman philosopher. There is no need for mankind to resent the term (animal). As a matter of fact man is sometimes more stupid than animals.

To my mind man is not only an animal who can laugh, but is the most intelligent of animals, and at the same time the most stupid; the most beautiful yet at the same time with many flaws. Man is an animal — for those who are sensitive, it is better that I call him 'creature' as an alternative — that is the most interesting to examine (study). A spectacle more gripping than a circus, more emotionally moving than a row of hills along the shore of a lake, more complex than a computer program.

He can flatter someone, but he can also cruelly kill his own kind. He can be as docile (faithful) as a duck, but he can also rebel like a mad snorting buffalo. He can also laugh without knowing why. His eyes can look fixed ahead without seeing what is in front of him. His ears can prick up to catch the flow of words without understanding them. Because of that, man is the animal or creature (for those who are sensitive) who is the most interesting to discuss critically and write stories about.

For example: Once I joined with a crowd of people listening to the report of a 'Lurah' (village chief) to a 'Bupati' (regent): '... our district has chalked up progress in 'Pelita' I. The harvest has been good, housing for the people has increased There are no longer people in the district who are homeless....' The people applauded. Then they went home leaving the Lurah's yard with their heads nodding as a sign of their approval. They (their eyes) did not see the dilapidated hovels on the edge of the streets they passed through. It was as though the hovels were an extension of the road-way and their inhabitants were creatures from another world which they could ignore.

I was astonished and full of questions. There is something wrong in the working of the organism called man. There is a short-circuit between the eyes, the ears and the computer of his brain (mind)!

A FASCINATING SPECTACLE

It is these matters that touch my sensitive heart.

I want to write about this most extraordinary animal. I want to tell the story of 'the most fascinating spectacle'. I want to link up the cable connecting eye, ear and brain. I want the entire mechanism of the human organism to function consciously. Most importantly, I want my writings to be read by those eyes and conveyed to the computer of the brain. That's why I decided to be a journalist, even though I got offers of employment in many places. I wanted to be a journalist who studied the source of news, i.e. man himself, animal ridens, the animal who can laugh.

It turns out that the work I chose has genuinely given me a great inner satisfaction. But not only that. I still savour the pleasurable side effects. Apart from the salary that comes through the cashier of the enterprise, from time to time 'discreet' envelopes come my way. Humans are indeed strange (odd). They sometimes want to replace the cable joining my eyes to my brain with foreign 'spare-parts' called money. But, as usual, sometimes the peculiarities are enjoyable, but sometimes too they can make some faces red.

However, my life as a journalist is full of excitement. Every morning I am keyed up, eager to see what the results of my work look like. Every morning I feel satisfaction and pride. A satisfaction and pride, which fortunately outweighs the disappointment of the afternoon when I see my paper used to wrap up peanuts. Never mind! Tomorrow morning the world will be able to look upon my new work again.

BAB KEDUA BELAS

(Chapter XII)

XII.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)
Bacalah pelajaran yang di bawah ini dengan saksama.
(Read the lesson below carefully.)

RAUMANEN

Raumanen adalah suatu nama khas Manado.

Memang Manen sendiri seorang gadis remaja bermuka **bundar,**[1] berkulit **langsep,**[2] sebagaimana umumnya dianggap menjadi ciri-ciri khas putri Manado. Memang dia sendiri pun menganggap dirinya 'orang Manado', sekalipun Minahasa tanah **leluhur**nya[3] ditinggalkannya sejak masih bayi, dan ia besar di kota Jakarta. Tak ada kampung lain yang dikenalnya selain Jakarta, **waduk**[4] **bergelora**[5] itu, di mana tiap hari orang-orang dari berbagai **pelosok**[6] Indonesia bertemu: orang Manado, orang Jawa, orang Padang, orang Sumba, orang Dayak, orang Cina, orang Batak, orang Toraja . . . Bertemu, bekerja sama, tetapi jarang bergaul.

Sejak kecil, Manen sudah biasa dengan interogasi orang tua bila membawa, atau dibawa teman, bermain ke rumah, 'Orang mana?' atau 'Anak siapa?'

Begitu sering didengarnya, sehingga **jiwa**[7] kekanak-kanakannya akhirnya menerima kata-kata ini sebagai suatu **pola**[8] kehidupan yang tak terubahkan lagi. Waktu itu memang Republik masih muda, dan siapa akan **menilai**[9] sampai ke mana semboyan 'Bhinneka Tunggal Ika' **meresap**[10] ke hati warganya?

Manen bersekolah, mendapat teman-teman berbagai **suku.**[11] Baginya itu adalah soal biasa, begitu juga bagi teman-temannya. Bukankah kebanyakan antara mereka lebih **fasih**[12] berbahasa Indonesia daripada bahasa daerahnya? **Malahan**[13] banyak di antaranya, seperti Manen sendiri, sudah lupa akan 'bahasa tanah' warisan leluhurnya. Salahkah itu? Tetapi sudah menjadi kenyataan perkembangan zaman.

Masih jauh jalan yang harus ditempuh, pikir Manen kadang-kadang. Sekarang, hampir 20 tahun sesudah Revolusi, sesudah dua **windu**[14] lebih penduduk Nusantara berpengalaman hidup sebagai 'orang Indonesia' — ternyata beban **prasangka**[15] serta **wasangka**[16] terhadap suku lain, masih belum sampai dilepaskan orang dengan begitu mudah.

'Orang mana?' dan 'Anak siapa?' masih tetap merupakan **nada-nada**[17] pertama suatu perkenalan baru. Dan kalaupun tak sampai terucapkan, sering kali **kerlingan mata**[18] lebih berarti dari seribu kata.

Bagi Manen dan keluarganya, soal kesukuan itu sudah **kadaluwarsa.**[19] Dari kelima kakaknya, cuma seorang yang **mem-persunting**[20] gadis sesukunya.

'Bhinneka tunggal ika!' kata ayahnya bangga, **menghimpunkan**[21] anak-anak **mantu**nya[22] di sekelilingnya.

'Syukurlah bahwa orang tuaku begitu luas pandangannya, begitu **lapang hati**nya,'[23] pikir Manen. Bagi mereka 'Indonesia' itu bukan cuma suatu istilah kosong saja, yang dapat sewaktu-waktu didesak oleh kesetiaan yang berlebih-lebihan pada peninggalan leluhur Minahasa.

Pada suatu perayaan, Manen sedang bercakap-cakap dengan seorang wanita setengah umur yang masih ada hubungan keluarga.

Iparnya,[24] Ferial, datang membisikkan sesuatu kepadanya, lalu pergi lagi.

Tante tua itu rupanya tak mengenalnya, dan berkata dengan suara kagum, 'Cantik betul nyonya India itu. Kenal dari mana?'

Manen tertawa geli. 'Ah, Tante! Itu 'kan Ferial iparku. Isteri Edu.'

Mata wanita itu membelalak.

'Aduh, . . . betulkah? Dan orang tuamu mengizinkannya?' Manen merasa mukanya menjadi merah-padam, menahan amarah. 'Malahan orang tua Ferial yang hampir-hampir tak mengizinkannya,' jawabnya dingin, **seraya**[25] pergi dari situ. Tak usah diterangkannya seluruh kisah-kasih kakaknya, perjuangan Edu dan Ferial membela cintanya. Untuk apa dituturkannya kepada wanita kolot itu bahwa kakek Ferial datangnya dari Medina, bukan dari India?

Bukankah sekarang kita semuanya orang Indonesia? Apakah manusia sendiri **berwenang**[26] menentukan suku bangsa kelahirannya? Dan apa gerangan menjadikan suku bangsa yang satu lebih **bermutu**,[27] lebih 'Indonesia', dari yang lain?

Begitulah kekolotan orang tua, pikir Manen waktu itu. Barangkali kita harus mengerti, **mengampuni.**[28] Terlalu banyak perubahan dalam hidup mereka, angkatan lama itu. Dahulu **diidam-idamkan**nya[29] kemerdekaan dari penjajah Belanda. Sesudah enyah musuh bersama itu, tiba-tiba mereka dihadapi dengan masalah hidup bersama sebagai satu bangsa. Bukan lagi sekian ratus suku.

Nyata bahwa masih ada yang tak sanggup mengikuti jalan zaman. Mungkin karena takut kehilangan segala-galanya dari dunia lamanya. Mau mempertahankan sesuatu peninggalan — sekalipun yang terburuk.

Pikir Manen, betapa beruntung kita yang lahir sesudah Indonesia merdeka, besar dalam Republik kesatuan. Langkah pertama sudah diambil orang tua kita. Kita hanya berjalan terus di atas jalan yang dibukanya bagi kita. Kata orang jalan-jalan tercipta pada awal mulanya, semata-mata karena orang banyak berjalan ke satu jurusan. Sehingga rumput tak sempat tumbuh lagi di bawah jejaknya, dan tanah **kerikil**[30] menjadi lebih datar terpijak derap langkah itu. Begitu juga dengan jalan pemikiran. Dalam hati kami yang lebih muda, tak begitu mudah tumbuh rumput purbasangka, atau kaki **tersandung**[31] oleh kerikil wasangka.

Kita kadang-kadang malah sanggup berlari sedangkan mereka yang lebih tua tertinggal — bingung, sedih. **Hasrat**[32] kita mencari alam yang lebih luas, bumi yang lebih bidang, dipersamakan mereka dengan pengkhianatan terhadap leluhur. Takut, kalau-kalau berhala hukum adat kehilangan **pemuja-pemuja**nya.[33]

Marianne Katoppo.

XII.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts.

1. bundar: round
2. langsep, langsat: a small oval fruit, yellowish-green
3. leluhur: ancestors
4. waduk: basin, cauldron
5. bergelora: to seethe
6. pelosok: outlying regions, corner
7. jiwa: soul, spirit, mind
8. pola: pattern
9. menilai: to judge, evaluate
10. meresap: to penetrate, be absorbed, soak in
11. suku: ethnic group
12. fasih: fluent
13. malahan: in fact, but rather, on the contrary
14. windu: a cycle of 8 years in Javanese calendrical reckoning
15. prasangka: prejudice
16. wasangka: suspicion
17. nada(-nada): tone.
18. kerlingan mata: the glance of an eye
19. kadaluwarsa: out of date
20. mempersunting: to place a flower/ornament in o's hair, take s.o. as a wife
21. menghimpunkan: to gather, assemble
22. mantu, menantu: son- or daughter-in-law
23. lapang hati: open, tolerant
24. ipar: sister- or brother-in-law
25. seraya: while, simultaneously
26. berwenang: to have power
27. bermutu: valuable, superior
28. mengampuni: to forgive
29. mengidam-idamkan, diidam-idamkan: to crave for, long for
30. kerikil: gravel, pebble

31. tersandung: to trip over, stumble
32. hasrat: desire, longing
33. pemuja(-pemuja): worshippers, devotees

XII.C. Comprehension

Jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan yang berikut dengan kalimat yang lengkap dalam Bahasa Indonesia.

1. Apakah kekhususan bentuk/rupa seorang wanita yang berasal dari Manado?
2. Apakah yang dinyatakan dalam paragraf pertama oleh pencerita tentang sikap Raumanen sebagai anak Manado yang dibesarkan di Jakarta?
3. Manen ada bergaul dengan anak-anak muda yang berasal dari daerah-daerah lain. Dari kalimat-kalimat mana Anda tahu?
4. Bahasa apakah yang dipakai Manen, kalau dia berbicara dengan teman-teman sepergaulannya? Apa sebabnya?
5. Kira-kira tahun berapakah cerita ini ditulis? Apakah menurut pencerita, orang Indonesia dalam soal kesukuan masih menghadapi kesukaran pada masa itu?
6. Bagi Manen dan keluarganya, adakah persoalan mengenai kesukuan itu? Jelaskanlah!
7. Siapakah Ferial, dan dia peranakan apa?
8. Pada suatu perayaan, Manen agak marah kepada seorang keluarga jauhnya, yang dipanggilnya 'Tante'. Kenapa?
9. Manen mempunyai pengertian yang dalam tentang perubahan-perubahan yang dialami angkatan lama. Dan Manen bersikap toleran terhadap orang tua-tua yang masih kolot. Apakah alasan-alasan yang dinyatakan Manen, yang menyebabkan orang tua-tua itu tak dapat merubah pendirian-pendirian lama mereka?
10. Apakah sebetulnya yang ditakutkan /disangsikan oleh kaum tua itu?

XII.D. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

Ulangan dan tambahan (Revision and Development)

The particle -lah

1. We have seen the particle **-lah**, used in imperatives as in the following sentences: (see also Langkah Baru, Book One, 8.5.A, 8.6.A and 8.8.A).

a.	**Periksakanlah** mata mereka, hindarkan kerusak-an penglihatan lebih lanjut.	a.	**Have** their eyes **examined**, avoid further harm to their vision.
b.	**Datanglah** ke tempat kami 'Optik Tunggal'.	b.	**Come** to our place 'Optik Tunggal'.

c. **Menepilah!** or: **Meminggirlah!** — c. **Move to the side** or: **step aside!** Get out of the way!

XII.D.2. The particle **-lah** is also used **in exclamations** as in the following sentences.

a.	**Tidak apalah!** Besok pagi dunia akan menyaksikan karyaku yang baru lagi.	a.	**Never mind!** Tomorrow morning the world will be able to look upon my new work again.
b.	**Untunglah,** saya sendiri ada di rumah waktu itu.	b.	Fortunately, I myself was at home at that time.
c.	**Syukurlah,** (bahwa) orang tuaku begitu luas pandangannya. (taken from the text)	c.	Thank goodness, my parents are so broad minded.
d.	**Entahlah,** tak tahu apa yang harus saya perbuat.	d.	**Goodness knows,** I've no idea what I should do.

XII.D.3. The particle **-lah** may be affixed to **a particular word** in a sentence to indicate emphasis as in the following sentences.

a.	'**Begitulah** kekolotan orang tua,' pikir Manen waktu itu. (taken from the text)	a.	'**Such** is the conservatism of the older generation,' Manen thought at the time.
b.	**Nyatalah** bahwa temanmu benar.	b.	**It is obvious** that your friend is right.
c.	Orang **inilah** yang disebut pengkhianat tanah air.	c.	**This** is the person whom one would call a traitor to his country.
d.	**Merekalah** yang dikirim untuk mewakili perserikatannya.	d.	**It is they** who were sent to represent their organisation.
e.	**Sukarlah** bagi saya untuk menerangkannya.	e.	**It is difficult** for me to explain it.
f.	**Bukanlah** begitu, temantemanku!	f.	**It is not** so, my friends!

XII.D.4. The particle **-lah** attached **to question words** is also commonly used in sentences which in English are best rendered as **rhetorical questions.**
Note that in Indonesian these sentences are not considered to be questions.
Study the following sentences observing carefully the **meaning** of the words in bold.

a.	Saya ini **apalah!** Saya hanya guru biasa.	a.	**What** am I? I'm just an ordinary teacher.
b.	Kalau di Indonesia kain ini harganya, **berapalah!** Jauh lebih murah.	b.	In Indonesia **how much** would this cloth be? Very much cheaper.
c.	Rp10.000,- **apalah** artinya bagimu!	c.	**What** would ten thousand rupiah mean to you? (implied answer: **very little**)
d.	**Apalah** dayaku! Aku tua dan miskin.	d.	**What** can I do? I'm old and poor.
e.	'Memasak, membersihkan rumah, **apalah** sukarnya!' kata suaminya marah.	e.	'Cooking, cleaning the house, **what's** difficult about that?' said the husband angrily.
f.	**Bagaimanalah** saya akan mengatakan kepadanya!	f.	**How** am I going to tell her?

XII.D.5. Finally **-lah** is used as a **stylistic device** simply **to give shape** and **balance** to a sentence.

a.	Setelah hujan teduh, **berangkatlah** kami.	a.	After the rain stopped, we **then set out.**
b.	Lima tahun saya harus menunggu. Waktu berjalan terus: tahun berganti dengan bulan, bulan berganti dengan minggu, minggu berganti dengan hari, akhirnya saat yang ditunggu-tunggu **datanglah.**	b.	I had to wait five years. Time followed its course, years became months, months became weeks, weeks became days and at last the long awaited moment **arrived.**

Note: It should not be confused with the abbreviation of **telah** which often occurs in literary work as in the following sentence:
Sungguh '**lah** lama aku menderita.: **I've** suffered for a very long time.

XII.E. The per- +root verb and the root + -kan verb
1. Note the transitive verbs in bold derived from **adjectives** in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.

a.	Untuk **memperluas** pengetahuanmu kamu harus banyak membaca.	a.	To **broaden** your knowledge (**more**) you have to read a lot.
b.	Siapa yang tidak khawatir melihat negara itu **meluaskan** pengaruh dan kekua-	b.	Who would not be anxious seeing that nation **extending** its influence and power in

saannya di Asia Tenggara? — Southeast Asia?

c. Jalan-jalan itu akan **ditinggikan**, karena dalam musim hujan sering terendam.
c. Those roads are going **to be built up high**, because during the rainy season they are often under water.

d. Untuk **mempertinggi** jalan itu akan makan biaya yang banyak sekali.
d. **To build that road up higher** will cost a great deal of money.

e. Isi surat itu **menguatkan** dugaanku, bahwa dia terlibat dalam hal itu.
e. The contents of that letter **strengthen** my suspicion that he is involved in that matter.

f. Kalau isi surat itu **memper-kuat** dugaan Anda, sekarang Anda hanya tinggal mem-buktikannya saja lagi.
f. If the contents of that letter **strengthen** your suspicion (**more**), all you have to do now is to prove them.

XII.E.1. Remarks

Memperluas is the subject focus form of the transitive verb **-perluas** derived from the root **luas**.
Meluaskan is the subject focus form of the transitive verb **-luaskan** which is also derived from the root **luas**. Both types of verb may in general be described as causative, i.e. to make something acquire the quality described by the root (see Langkah Baru, Book One, 13.4.A and 17.11.A.1). There is, however, a significant difference between them:
meluaskan, to extend or broaden something originally small or narrow,
memperluas, to extend or broaden something already extensive or broad.
This distinction cannot always be expressed in an English translation and there are in fact a number of pairs of **per- + root verbs** and **root + -kan verbs** with no distinction in meaning. It must be noted, however, that **per- + root** verbs and **root + -kan** verbs are not always interchangeable.

g. Waktu didengarnya sirene mobil polisi, **dipercepat-nya** larinya dan menghilang di pasar ramai.
g. When he heard the siren of the police car, he ran **faster**, and vanished into the crowded market.

h. **Cepatkan**lah/ **percepat**lah langkahmu! Hari akan hujan.
h. Walk **faster**. It is going to rain.

i. Bahasa-bahasa daerah berpengaruh besar dalam hal **memperkaya** Bahasa Indonesia.
i. The regional languages have had a great influence in **en-riching** Bahasa Indonesia.

j. Jumlah tentara dan senjata
j. The number of troops and

senantiasa **diperbanyak**. Kenapa? Sedangkan rakyat banyak yang lapar.

weapons is continually **being increased**. Why? When many of the people go hungry.

k. Untuk **memperlancar/ melancarkan** pelaksanaan proyek itu, (ke)rangka kerja, bahan-bahan dan alat-alat sudah disediakan.

k. In order to make the execution of the project **run smoothly** the work plan, the materials and the equipment, have been prepared.

l. Saya tidak bermaksud untuk **mempersulit** pekerjaan Saudara yang sudah cukup ruwet.

l. I don't want to make your work **more difficult**; it's complicated enough already.

XII.E.2. Per- + root verbs derived from nouns

The **per- + root verbs** in the following sentences derived from **nouns**. They mean **to take s.t. or s.o. as, treat s.t. or s.o. as,** or **use s.t. or s.o. as** the noun indicated by the root.

a. Dari kelima kakaknya cuma seorang yang **memper-sunting** gadis sesukunya. (taken from the text)

a. Of her five older brothers and sisters, only one brother **married** a girl of his own clan.

b. Bunga mawar yang **diper-suntingnya** sudah mulai layu.

b. The rose which she **wore in her hair** has begun to wilt. (lit: to use the rose as an ornament.)

c. Simbolon, pemuda dari Tapanuli itu tidak diizinkan oleh orang tuanya **memper-istri** gadis Jawa, gadis idamannya.

c. Simbolon, the young man from Tapanuli, was not allowed by his parents **to marry** a Javanese girl, the girl of his dreams.

d. Siapa yang sudi **memper-suami** orang yang kasar, angkuh dan tamak akan harta itu?

d. Who would want to **marry** a man who is coarse, arrogant and avaricious?

e. Jangan mau **diperbudak** oleh nyonya itu. Gajimu tidak seimbang dengan pekerjaanmu.

e. Don't let yourself **be treated as a slave** by that woman. Your pay isn't commensurate with the work you do.

f. Udin membutuhkan seseorang untuk **diperbapak**. Bapaknya meninggal, ketika

f. Udin needs someone **to be a father figure to him.** His father died when he was still

	dia masih kecil.		young.
g.	Kepala kebun yang baru itu, mabuk pangkat. Dia mau dihormati, **dipertuan** oleh setiap orang bawahannya.	g.	The new plantation manager is power crazy. He wants to be respected and **treated as a master** by all his subordinates.
h.	Karena tidak ada payung, Amin **mempertudung** daun pisang.	h.	Because he didn't have an umbrella, Amin **used** a banana leaf **as a shelter** from the rain.
i.	Nasihat Nenek, malam akan saya **perbantal** dan siang akan saya **pertongkat.**	i.	I will **treat** your advice, Grandmother, **as a pillow** by night, and **as a staff** by day.
j.	Si sakit itu terbaring di balai-balai dan kain yang **diperselimutnya** kumal dan sobek-sobek.	j.	The sick person was lying on a bench and the cloth he **used as a blanket** was grimy and torn.

XII.E.3. Ber- + root verb and **per- + root verb** derived from the word **oleh**. The **ber- + root verb beroleh** is intransitive, describing the state of receiving.The corresponding transitive form is **-peroleh**, suggests the effect that leads up to getting whatever that is. Study the following sentences, observing carefully the **form** and **meaning** of the words in bold. Then master the sentences.

a.	Untuk mengerjakan semuanya itu dia tidak **beroleh** sesen pun.	a.	For doing all that, he didn't **get** a single cent.
b.	Sesudah enam tahun belajar barulah dia **beroleh** gelar.	b.	Only after she had been studying for six years did she **obtain** a degree.
c.	Dia selalu **beroleh** angka yang baik di sekolah. Untuk **memperoleh** angka yang baik itu, dia betul-betul bekerja keras.	c.	She always **gets** good marks at school. **To obtain** those good marks, she works really hard.
d.	Restoran itu **beroleh** nama baik, karena masakannya enak dan pelayanannya baik.	d.	That restaurant **has gained** a good name/reputation, because its cooking is delicious and its service is good.
e.	Untuk **memperoleh** manfaatnya, obat itu harus kamu minum tiap hari dan teratur.	e.	To **gain/obtain/get** the benefit, you have to take the medicine regularly every day.
f.	Pergi ke luar negeri tidak	f.	To go abroad is not easy. In

mudah. Di negeri saya untuk **memperoleh** sebuah paspor, makan biaya yang banyak dan waktu yang lama.

my country, **to obtain** a passport is expensive and takes a long time.

g. Uang yang saya **peroleh** tiap-tiap bulan, hanya cukup untuk makan.

g. The money that **I receive** every month is only enough for food.

h. Buku yang kamu **peroleh** dari temanmu, apa namanya dan siapa pengarangnya?

h. What is the name and the author of the book that you **got** from your friend?

XII.E.4. Ber- + root verb and **per- + root verb** derived from the word **buat**.

The **ber- + root** verb **berbuat** is intransitive. The corresponding transitive form is **-perbuat.**Study the following sentences, observing carefully the **form** and **meaning** of the words in bold. Then master the sentences.

a. Janganlah sekali-kali **berbuat curang**!

a. Don't ever **be deceitful!** or: Don't ever **cheat!**

b. Apakah maksudnya untuk **berbuat** demikian?

b. What did he **do** that for?

c. Janganlah **berbuat** sekehendak hatimu.

c. Don't **do** just as you like.

d. Orang itu sering **berbuat baik**, dan selalu bersedia menolong.

d. That person often **does a good turn**, and is always ready to help.

e. Apa saja yang akan kamu **perbuat**, harus kamu pikirkan dan perhitungkan baik-baik.

e. Whatever you **do**, you must think about it carefully, and weigh up the pros and cons.

f. Apakah yang **kauperbuat** di situ? Atau: Engkau **berbuat** apa di situ?

f. What **are you doing** there? or: What **did** you do there?

XII.F. Penggunaan kata dan ungkapan (Use of Words and Phrases)

Note the meaning of the word **sampai** in the following sentences. Then master the sentences.

sampai: to, till, until, up to

1. Didi yang baru berumur empat tahun sudah pandai

1. Didi, who is just 4 years old, can already count from one

berhitung dari satu **sampai** sepuluh.

to ten.

2. **Sampai** pukul berapakah Ayah bekerja tadi malam?

2. **Until** what time did Father work last night?

3. Bacalah buku itu **sampai** tamat.

3. Read that book **till** the end. or: **till** you finish it.

4. Lama dia menangis, **sampai** bengkak matanya.

4. She cried for a long time, **until** her eyes were swollen.

5. Siapa akan menilai **sampai ke mana** semboyan 'Bhinneka Tunggal Ika' meresap ke hati warganya? (taken from the text)

5. Who can judge **how far** the slogan 'Bhinneka Tunggal Ika' has penetrated the hearts of the citizens?

6. Pukul berapakah bis ini **sampai** ke Semarang?

6. What time does this bus **reach** Semarang?

7. Paket yang Ibu kirimkan belum **sampai** lagi. Dengan kapal laut atau dengan kapal

7. The parcel (which) you sent hasn't **arrived** yet. Did you send it by sea-mail or by

8. 'Orang mana?' dan 'Anak siapa?' masih tetap merupakan nada-nada pertama suatu perkenalan. Dan kalaupun **tak sampai terucapkan,** sering kali kerlingan mata lebih berarti dari seribu kata. (taken from the text)

8. 'Where are you from?' and 'Whose child are you?' still set the tone of any new acquaintance. And even if they **don't reach to the point of uttering** these words, often a glance means more than a thousand words.

9. Mudah-mudahan **sampailah** cita-citamu itu.

9. I hope you **achieve** your ambitions/ideals.

10. Saya kira gajinya **tidak sampai** untuk hidup sebulan.

10. I think his salary is **insufficient** for him to live on for a month.

11. Harga buku itu **tidak sampai** Rp10.000,00.

11. The price of that book **wouldn't be as much as** Rp10,000 (or: it **would be less than...**).

12. Kalau naik bis dari sini ke Malang **tidak sampai** dua jam.

12. If you take a bus from here to Malang **it wouldn't take** two hours.

13. Suaranya hanya **sayup-sayup sampai kedengaran**.

13. Her voice could only be **faintly heard.**

14. Tolong **sampaikan** salam

14. Please **give** my regards to our

saya kepada teman-teman kita di kampung. — friends at home (in the village).

15. Pesanmu kepada Amin sudah saya **sampaikan.** Kebetulan saya bertemu dengan dia di mesjid. — 15. I've **passed on** your message to Amin. By chance I met him at the mosque.
16. Saya hanya juru tulis, gaji kecil, anak tiga orang, jadi dari bulan ke bulan **tidak sampai-menyampai.** — 16. I'm only a clerk with a small salary and three children, so I **can hardly make ends meet** from month to month.

XII.G. Memperluas kosakata (Vocabulary Expansion)

Note the **compound words** in bold type in the following sentences. They are used very commonly in everyday speech. Then master the sentences.

1. Manen merasa mukanya menjadi **merah-padam**, menahan amarah. (taken from the text) — 1. Manen felt her face become **very red** as she tried to restrain her anger.
2. Orang minta-minta, **kurus-kering, berbaju compang-camping** dan menggali-gali tong sampah, suatu pemandangan yang biasa di ibu kota. — 2. Beggars, just **skin and bones, wearing rags** (or: in tattered clothes), and scavenging in the rubbish bins, are a familiar sight in the capital.
3. Malam itu hujan lebat dan **gelap-gulita**. Amin terpaksa pergi berjalan kaki menjemput dukun untuk menolong istrinya yang akan melahirkan. — 3. That night it was raining heavily and **pitch dark.** Amin had to go on foot to fetch the 'dukun' (practitioner of traditional medicine) to help his wife who was about to give birth.
4. Tuan dan Nyonya Siregar mengadakan pesta malam itu. Rumah dan halamannya **terang-benderang** dan penuh dengan tamu-tamu. — 4. Mr.and Mrs.Siregar held a party that night. Their house and yard were **brightly lit** and filled with guests.
5. Dia adalah seorang dari usahawan yang **kaya-raya** di Indonesia. — 5. He is one of the **really rich** businessmen in Indonesia.
6. **Penuh-sesak** stadion oleh orang yang berduyun-duyun datang untuk menonton pertandingan sepak bola itu. — 6. The stadium was **packed tight** with people coming in throngs to watch the football match.

7. Di persimpangan itu ramai sepanjang hari dengan berbagai macam kendaraan yang **simpang-siur.** — 7. At that intersection it is busy all day long with various kinds of vehicles **weaving in and out.**
8. Bukan main **hiruk-pikuknya** di pelabuhan itu: bunyi peluit kapal, bunyi mesin, gerobak, teriak kuli-kuli membongkar dan memuat barang-barang. — 8. The harbour was **in uproar** (very noisy): there was the sound of ships' horns, of hand carts and the shouts of the labourers unloading and loading goods.
9. 'Kalau saya **tua-bangka** nanti, janganlah hendaknya saya sampai membebani cucu-cucu saya,' kata Pak Karto. — 9. 'When I'm **old and decrepit** later, may I never become a burden to my grandchildren,' said Pak Karto.
10. 'Kalau dibandingkan dengan saya, dia masih **muda-belia,'** kata Bapak Anwar. — 10. 'Compared with me he is still **very youthful,'** said Mr. Anwar.

XII.H. Exercises

The following compound words are also common in every day situations. Note carefully how they are used in the following sentences, then translate the sentences into English. Use a dictionary if you need to.

1. Terima kasih, Pak. Bapak telah **(ber)susah-payah** mencarikan saya tempat tinggal.
2. Makanlah rendang itu! Nenekmu sudah **susah-payah** memasaknya.
3. Semua orang sudah tidur. **Sunyi-senyap** dalam rumah itu.
4. Dia takut melalui jalan yang gelap dan **sunyi-senyap** itu.
5. Waktu tiba di rumah, pakaiannya **basah-kuyup**, karena dia kehujanan di jalan.
6. Bambang melap kucingnya yang **basah-kuyup** itu karena ia jatuh ke dalam sungai.
7. Tentara musuh lari **cerai-berai**, ketika tentara kita menyerbu.
8. Setelah orang tuanya berpisah anak-anak itu hidup **cerai-berai.**
9. **Gegap-gempita** bunyi meriam menyambut kedatangan presiden negara tetangga itu.
10. **Gegap-gempita** bunyi tepuk-sorak orang dalam gedung pertemuan itu.
11. Kami mengumpulkan pakaian bekas untuk diberikan kepada orang yang **papa-miskin.**
12. Banyak orang yang **papa-miskin** berkeliaran di ibu kota.

XII.I. Oral and Written Expression (Mengemukakan buah fikiran secara lisan maupun tulisan)

Write a brief essay in Indonesian of about 150 words on:
Life in a Multicultural Society (Hidup dalam masyarakat pelbagai ras)

XII.A. English Version

RAUMANEN

Raumanen is a typically Manadonese name.

Indeed, Manen herself was a teenage girl with a round face and olive coloured skin, which generally are regarded as characteristic features of Manadonese girls. Indeed she considered herself to be a Manadonese, even though she had left Minahasa, the land of her ancestors, when she was a baby and had grown up in the city of Jakarta. She knew no other place than Jakarta, a seething cauldron, a place where every day people from the various corners of Indonesia met: Manadonese, Javanese, people from Padang, from Sumba, Dayaks, Chinese, Bataks, Torajanese . . . .Meeting, working together, but rarely mixing.

Since she was small, Manen was used to the questions of parents when she brought friends home or was taken to friends' houses to play, 'Where is she from?' or 'Whose child is she?'

She had heard it so often that her child's mind eventually accepted these words as a pattern of life that could not be changed any more. At that time the republic was still young, and who could judge how far the slogan 'Bhinneka Tunggal Ika' had penetrated the hearts of its citizens?

Manen, at school, had friends from various ethnic groups. For her, it was a normal thing, and likewise for her friends. Were not the majority of them more fluent in Bahasa Indonesia than in their regional languages? In fact, many among them, like Manen herself had forgotten their regional language, the legacy of their ancestors. Was there anything wrong with that? But it had become a reality with the passing of time.

There is still a long way to go, thought Manen sometimes. Now, almost twenty years after the revolution, after more than two **windu** the inhabitants of the archipelago had experienced life as Indonesians — it was clear that the burden of prejudice and suspicion of one ethnic group towards another had not been easily dropped.

'Where are you from?' and 'whose child are you?' still set the tone of any new acquaintance, and even if those words were not stated (expressed) often the glance of an eye meant more than a thousand words.

For Manen and her family, the question of ethnicity was an old story. Of her five older siblings only one was married to a girl of his own ethnic group.

'Bhinneka tunggal ika!' said her father proudly, gathering his children-in-law around him.

'Thank goodness my parents are so broad minded, so open,' thought Manen. For them, Indonesia was not just an empty term, which could at any time be pushed aside by exaggerated loyalties to the heritage of their Minahasa ancestors.

At a ceremony, Manen was talking with a middle-aged lady with whom she was distantly related.

Her sister-in-law, Ferial, came to whisper something to her and then went away again.

The older lady apparently did not know her, and said with an astonished voice, 'That Indian lady is very attractive. How did you get to know her?'

Manen laughed in amusement. 'Ah, Aunty! That's Ferial, my sister-in-law. Edu's wife.'

The eyes of the lady opened wide.

'Good gracious . . .really? And did your parents allow it?'

Manen felt her face going very red as she tried to restrain her anger. 'On the contrary, Ferial's parents almost didn't allow it,' she replied coldly while walking away. Was there any need to tell the love story of her older brother - of the struggle of Edu and Ferial standing up for their love? What was the point of telling the old-fashioned woman that Ferial's grandfather came from Medina, not from India?

Aren't we now all Indonesians? Does anyone have the power to determine the ethnic group of his birth? And what could make one ethnic group more superior, more 'Indonesian' than another?

That is the conservatism of older people, thought Manen at the time. Perhaps we ought to understand, to forgive. There have been too many changes in the lives of those of the older generation. Before they longed for freedom from the Dutch oppressor. Having got rid of the mutual enemy, suddenly they were confronted with the problem of living together as one people. No longer, as hundreds of ethnic groups.

It was obvious that there were still some who could not keep up with the times. Perhaps because they were afraid of losing everything from the old world. They wanted to preserve something of their heritage — even the worst aspects.

Thought Manen, how lucky we are to have been born after Indonesia was free, to have grown up in a unitary republic. The first step was taken by our parents. We are only following the road that they opened for us. People say, roads were first made simply because many people went in one direction so that the grass did not have a chance to grow again beneath their feet, and the stony ground became smooth, trodden down by their tramping stride. It is the same with the way people think. It is not so easy for the grass of suspicion to grow in the hearts of we who are younger, or for our feet to strike against the stones of prejudice.

Sometimes, we are even able to run, whereas those who are older are left behind — bewildered, saddened. Our longing to find a wider world, a more spacious earth, they regard as tantamount to a betrayal of our ancestors. Afraid that the idol of 'adat' law might lose its devotees.

BAB KETIGA BELAS

(Chapter XIII)

XIII.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)
Bacalah pelajaran di bawah ini dengan saksama. (Read the lesson below carefully.)

KEBUN DI TANJUNG

Saya melewati jembatan berlantai **papan.**[1] **Papan-papan itu telah berantakan,**[2] **keropok**[3] dan patah-patah. Di depan **terbentanglah**[4] sebuah **tanjung**[5] kecil. Ada kebun di situ. Pada **teluk**[6] ada sebatang **bangkar kayu**[7] besar yang hitam, **mencuat**[8] tinggi ke udara. Dan pada pasiran di seberang ada **biduk**[9] **tertungkup.**[10] Di seberang sungai yang mengalir pelan dan airnya **tohor**[11] tumbuh **semak gelegah.**[12] Ada orang lalu berbiduk **menghulu.**[13] Ia **mendayung**[14] dengan **galah**[15] panjang. Sebentar hilanglah dia dari pandangan.

Dari arah kebun terdengar ayam berkokok. **Kelindungan**[16] oleh daun-daunan nampak sebuah rumah pondok beratap **lalang.**[17] Di tengah kebun tumbuh jagung yang besar-besar dan sedang berbunga. Seekor **belalang**[18] besar, terbang tinggi **mendadak**[19] dari hadapan saya. Sinar matahari **kemilau**[20] pada **bintik hujan**[21] yang **bertabur bermanik-manik.**[22]

Saya membelok ke arah kebun. Sepatu **kanpas**[23] yang kemasukan air terasa licin **meniti**[24] batang karet, yang **melintang**[25] di atas sebuah **bendar**[26] di tepi jalan raya. Dari titian ada jalan setapak yang lurus dirimbuni pohon pepaya, pisang dan **tebu**[27] ke arah pondok. Bayangan mereka terangguk-angguk, seperti memberi salam kepada saya. Ayam-ayam berlarian dan **berkotek.**[28] Belalang dan **kadal**[29] meloncat-loncat menghindar. Ada anjing **menyalak**[30] dari tempat yang jauh.

Seorang laki-laki berpakaian hitam, seperti orang **Badui**[31] dan memegang **juran,**[32] memperhatikan saya datang menghampir. Saya mengangguk.

'Permisi, Bang,' **sapa**[33] saya. 'Bolehkah saya membeli sebatang tebu?' Lalu saya melihat berkeliling untuk menyatakan betapa saya tertarik akan rumpun-rumpun tebu yang **bernas.**[34] Saya buka topi yang berat, karena basah. Sinar matahari kini **menyorot**[35] pada **ubun-uhun**[36] saya. Dan dari balik bukit-bukit rendah, nampak awan stratocumulus yang bergumpal-gumpal tinggi selayak timbunan kapas. Orang itu memperhatikan saya, dari kaki sampai kepala.

'Oh! Boleh saja. Bung mau ke mana?' Ia meletakkan juran di atas kandang ayam di **kolong**[37] pondok.

'Mau ke Ujung Gading!'

'Ujung Gading?' Nada suaranya seperti kenal betul akan kota kecil itu.

'Dan dari mana?'

'Dari Lubuk Sikaping!'

Ia mengangguk, lalu menengadah. 'Ros! Ros!' Ia memanggil. 'Ambilkan **parang**!'[38]

Terdengar langkah **berdetar-detar**[39] pada lantai rumah dan seorang perempuan muncul di pintu. Rasanya tadi ia pun ada memperhatikan saya datang, sambil berdiri **menghempang**[40] di pintu yang gelap. Ia turun, lalu menyerahkan **sebilah**[41] parang besar kepada laki-laki itu. Ketika turun sanggulnya lepas. Buah dadanya bagian atas **memampang**[42] dan **bergurat-gurat**[43] membiru. Sambil menyanggulkan rambut pelan ia kembali naik.

'Mari naik dulu!' sapanya. Terdengar ia **membentangkan**[44] tikar dekat pintu.

'Ya, naiklah dulu,' kata si laki-laki. Ia pun pergi ke dalam kebun.

'Terima kasih!' kata saya. 'Enak benar di sini!'

Saya buka sepatu, sambil membuang air yang **menggenang**[45] di dalam. Kaus kaki yang hitam, saya **piuh**[46] dan saya masukkan ke dalam. Saya naik **jenjang**,[47] **duduk berjuntai**[48] di pintu, menghadap ke arah sungai. Perempuan itu **mengayun-ayun**[49] seorang bayi dalam **buaian**[50] **kain panjang**.[51] Di atas **para**[52] dapur bergantungan jagung untuk bibit. Asap yang tipis berkepul dari **tungku**,[53] di atasnya **terjerang**[54] sebuah cerek yang telah hitam tebal, karena **arang**[55] dan **jelaga**.[56] Dari tengah kebun terdengar daun berdesar dan detak-detak orang **menebang**.[57]

'Mau apa kau ke Ujung Gading?' tanya perempuan itu. 'Pindah kerja?'

'Bukan! **Tourne**!'[58] kata saya membohong. Dalam perjalanan mudik yang jauh ini dan telah hampir sepuluh hari saya sejak berangkat dari Bandung saya selalu ingin mengatakan kepada orang yang **berpapasan**[59] bahwa saya datang dari tempat yang dekat saja, dan seolah bukan untuk **menjenguk**[60] orang tua yang sudah delapan tahun tak jumpa. Ini penting bagi saya, karena saya tak ingin merepotkan orang, atau mengejutkan mereka untuk hal yang tidak-tidak.

Perempuan itu menuangkan **air kopi daun**[61] dari cerek, lalu menghidangkannya di depan saya. Dari para dia tarik **sesisir pisang**[62] harum manis dan menghidangkannya pula. 'Silakan!' katanya, lalu pergi lagi mengayun bayi.

Pada sinar mata perempuan ini nampak ia ingin menanyakan yang banyak. Tapi ia tahan. Saya pun bermenung-menung saja. Topi saya taruh di sebelah saya, dan **mengupas**[63] pisang. Sesekali angin segar yang **mendesar-desarkan**[64] daun pisang dan tebu **bertiup**[65] ke muka saya. Ini membuat saya merasa makin malas untuk kembali berjalan nanti melintasi panas terik jalan raya. Dari atas sini nampaklah tanjung itu dengan bebas. Ada biduk menghilir dengan cepat. Di atas biduk seorang laki-laki bertopi sedang mendayung sering. Di depannya **teronggok**[66] pisang **bermayang-mayang**.[67] Dayungnya yang menyentuh sisi biduk terdengar **berdetuk-detuk**[68] makin lama makin sayup sampai menghilang di balik **rantau**.[69] Dekat jembatan yang rusak, di sebelah ke sana teluk, ada beberapa **batang**

rumbia.[70] Daunnya bergetar ditiup angin, seperti ingin **menepaskan**[71] air hujan yang masih **lengket.**[72] Matahari yang kini telah jauh **condong**[73] ke barat, menyorot pada permukaan teluk dan nampak kemilau. **Nun**[74] di tengah kebun karet, di seberang jalan raya ada **burung tekukur**[75] sedang bertegur-teguran. Pada beberapa tempat daun karet itu telah **kejinggaan**[76] dan daun itu melayang berguguran.

Laki-laki itu muncul membawa sebatang tebu, yang kulitnya kuning kehijauan. Jenis tebu yang terkenal paling manis di daerah ini.

'Dikupas sekalian, ya?' katanya menengadah. Saya mengangguk. Ia memotong tebu jadi dua, mengupasnya di bawah rumpun pisang. Setelah dikupas ia langsung **mengerat-ngerat**nya[77] dan menaruhnya di atas daun pisang. Setelah ia mengupas kira enam **buku,**[78] keratan tebu itu dia bungkus lalu dia **ulurkan**[79] kepada saya.

'Mau dimakan di sini saja atau di jalan?'

'Di jalan saja. Terima kasih banyak, Bang. Repot-repot mengupasnya segala.'

Saya turun dan memasukkan bungkus tebu ke dalam tas. Pelan-pelan saya pakai kembali sepatu saya dan **menyampirkan**[80] jas hujan di bahu.

'Berapa saya harus bayar, Bang?'

'Bayar apa? Tak usah!'

'Masa, Bang. Saya sungguh ingin membeli tadi. Saya ada beruang.'

'Tak ada yang menjual. Makanya tak ada yang harus dibayar!' Ia tertawa ringan. Isterinya melihatkan di pintu.

Saya **merogo**[81] saku baju. Ia mengangkat tangan seperti mau menahan lemari yang mau **rebah.**[82]

'Tidak! Jangan! Tak usah dibayar. Sungguh!'

Saya tahu **pekerti**[83] orang sini. Air mukanya juga memperlihatkan isi hati yang sungguh. Sudah lama saya bercampur dengan masyarakat yang segala hal ingin diukur dengan uang, dan ini mempengaruhi saya benar. Saya ingat kembali akan suasana, maka saya tak jadi mengeluarkan uang.

'Kalau begitu, terima kasih, Bang.'

Saya lekatkan topi saya.

'Permisi, Kak. Saya pergi lagi. Terima kasih, minumannya.'

Oleh Wildan Yatim,
dikutip dari 'Saat orang berterus-terang.'

XIII.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts. Please familiarise yourself with this list before reading the text.

1. papan: plank, board
2. berantakan: to fall to pieces, dilapidated, chaos, disorder, in a mess

3. keropok or: keropong: hollow
4. terbentang: to spread out, extending outward, jutting out
5. tanjung: cape, promontory
6. teluk: bay
7. bangkar/bangkal kayu: tree (Albizia procera)
8. mencuat: to stand out; stick up, project upwards
9. biduk: small fishing boat, boats used as floating markets
10. tertungkup: prostrate, lying upside down (of boat, cup, plate etc.)
11. tohor: shallow
12. semak gelegah or: gelagah: reed, water grass of various kinds
13. -menghulu: to go upstream
14. mendayung: to row a boat, to paddle
15. galah: pole, punting pole
16. kelindungan: sheltered
17. lalang: tall weed i.e. long grass growing on uncultivated land
18. belalang: grasshopper
19. mendadak: suddenly, unexpectedly
20. kemilau: shining, glistening
21. bintik hujan: raindrops
23. kanpas: canvas
24. meniti: to walk along s.t. narrow (footbridge, pole, tightrope)
25. melintang: to lie athwart, lie across
26. bendar or bandar: creek, ditch
27. tebu: sugar-cane
28. berkotek: to cluck
29. kadal: lizard
30. menyalak: to bark
31. Badui: an aboriginal group in West Java
32. juran or joran: fishing rod
33. sapa, menyapa: to speak, to address, greet
34. bernas: well filled (of grains, fruit), well formed (of sugar cane)
35. menyorot: to shine
36. ubun-ubun: fontanel, crown (of the head)
37. kolong: space (under a house or bed etc.)
38. parang: machete
39. berdetar-detar: clatter of footsteps on wooden or bamboo floor
40. meng(h)empang: to block
41. bilah: classifier for long flat objects such as planks or things shaped like knives or swords
42. memampang: clearly visible, exposed
43. bergurat-gurat: lined
44. membentangkan: to spread out, roll out
45. menggenang: collect, lie in pools (of liquid)
46. piuh, memiuh: to wring, twist
47. jenjang: steps
48. duduk berjuntai: sitting on chairs, steps etc. with legs down as opposed to sitting crossed legged on the floor
49. mengayun-ayun: to rock (baby, cradle), sway, swing s.t.
50. buaian: cradle (here made up of a piece of batik like a hammock)
51. kain panjang: a length of batik worn as wrap-around skirt
52. para: rack or shelf in the kitchen over a stove or fireplace to put cooking utensils, to dry fire wood or corn, etc.
53. tungku: fireplace (for cooking)

54. terjerang: placed on the fire
55. arang: charcoal
56 jelaga: soot
57. menebang: to fell
58. tourne, torne: business tour to inspect s.t.
59. berpapasan: to pass each other
60. menjenguk: to visit
61. air kopi daun: brew of coffee leaves
62. sesisir pisang: a hand of bananas (still intact)
63. mengupas: to peel
64. mendesar-desarkan: to rustle (leaves)
65. bertiup: to blow (of wind)
66. teronggok: piled up
67. bermayang-mayang: clusters (of bananas still on stem)
68. berdetuk-detuk: sound of paddle knocking against the boat
69. rantau: reaches, curve, inlet, bay
70. batang rumbia: sago palm
71. menepaskan: to shake off, get rid of s.t.
72. lengket: to cling, stick
73. condong: inclined, to set (of the sun)
74. nun: yonder
75. burung tekukur: cuckoo-dove, wood pigeon
76. kejinggaan: to turn yellow
77. mengerat-ngerat: to cut into pieces
78. buku: joint, knot
79. ulurkan, mengulurkan: to hand s.t., pass s.t.
80. menyampirkan: to sling s.t. (over the shoulder), hang s.t.
81. merogo(h): to feel in one's pocket
82. rebah: to fall down
83. pekerti: character, nature (of people)

XIII.C. Comprehension

Jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan di bawah ini, dengan kalimat yang lengkap dalam Bahasa Indonesia berdasarkan bacaan yang berjudul 'Kebun di Tanjung'.

1. Lukiskanlah dengan kata-kata Anda sendiri, keadaan jembatan yang diseberangi tokoh dalam cerita ini dalam perjalanannya.
2. Di tepi jalan raya itu ada pula bendar. Apa yang melintang di atas bendar itu yang disebut titian? Kenapa titian itu terasa licin olehnya, ketika dia menitinya?
3. Apakah sungai yang disebut dalam bacaan ini dipakai untuk lalu lintas? Jelaskan jawab Anda dengan mengutip kalimat(-kalimat) dari bacaan ini.
4. Binatang dan binatang ternak apa yang dipelihara di kebun itu?
5. Apakah tujuan orang itu untuk singgah di kebun itu? Tanaman apa yang ada di sana?
6. Apakah perempuan yang dipanggilkan 'Ros' oleh laki-laki pemilik kebun itu menghormati tamunya?

7. Apakah sebabnya tokoh itu tidak mau mengatakan kepada orang di kebun itu atau kepada orang yang berpapasan, bahwa dia dalam perjalanan dari Jawa ke Ujung Gading untuk menengok orang tuanya?
8. Sudah berapa tahun dia tidak pulang? Sudah berapa hari dia dalam perjalanannya?
9. Hari sudah mulai sore, ketika tokoh itu meninggalkan kebun itu. Jelaskan dengan mengutip kalimat (-kalimat) dari bacaan.
10. Pemilik kebun itu tidak mau menerima uang untuk tebunya dari tokoh dalam cerita ini. Kenapa tidak?

XIII.D. Pribahasa (Proverbs)

Pelajarilah pribahasa di bawah ini!

1. **Titian biasa lapuk, janji biasa mungkir.**
   Titian is a footbridge, commonly a weather-worn tree trunk laid across a stream.
   lapuk: rotten, rotted (of wood)
   mungkir/memungkiri janji: to break/disavow a promise.

   A foot-bridge is often decayed, and a promise is often disavowed. In other words, it is an every day thing for a 'titian' to be 'lapuk' and for a promise to be disavowed.
   In Indonesia this saying 'Titian biasa lapuk, janji biasa mungkir' is often used jocularly as a comment on a promise not kept.

2. **Masuk kandang kerbau melenguh dan masuk kandang kambing mengembik.**
   Melenguh means to low and **mengembik** means to bleat.
   Literally the meaning of this saying is:
   In the buffalo stall one should low, and in the goat stall one should bleat.
   An approximate English equivalent is: When in Rome, do as the Romans do.

XIII.E. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

1. Perhatikanlah **arti** dan **fungsi** kata yang terdiri dari **kata + dasar +** -**an** dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut.
(Study the following sentences observing carefully the meaning of the **root** + **-an** forms and their functions in the sentences.)

a. Dari **titian** ada jalan setapak yang lurus dirimbuni pohon pepaya, pisang dan tebu ke arah pondok (taken from the text).
meniti: to walk along s.t. narrow like a foot-bridge, a pole, etc.

a. From the **bridge** leading in the direction of the shack, was a straight path, shaded with pawpaw trees, banana and sugar-cane.

b.	Perempuan itu mengayun-ayun seorang bayi dalam **buaian** (taken from the text). **berbuai**: to swing **membuaikan**: to swing or rock s.t.	b.	The woman was rocking a baby in a **cradle**.
c.	Jas hujan siapa itu yang tergantung pada **gantungan?** **menggantungkan**: to hang something on s.t.	c.	Whose raincoat is it hanging on that **hanger** (hook)?
d.	Tadi pagi Ibu memasak nasi dengan **kukusan** baru. **mengukus**: to steam (of food)	d.	This morning Mother cooked rice with a new **steamer**.
e.	Berapa tahun lamanya kepulauan Indonesia dijajah Belanda? **Jajahan** yang sungguh luas untuk negara yang begitu kecil. **menjajah:** to colonise	e.	How many years were the islands of Indonesia colonised by the Dutch? It was a very wide area of **(colonial) rule** for such a small nation.
f.	Gembala itu berbaring-baring di bawah pohon, sementara kerbaunya berendam diri di dalam **kubangan.** **berkubang**: to wallow	f.	The herd-boy lay resting beneath the tree while his buffaloes wallowed in the **mud-hole**.
g.	Banyak anak-anak bermain di taman itu, karena di sana ada **ayunan**. **mengayun(kan)**, to rock, sway, swing s.t.	g.	A lot of children play in that park because there are **swings** there.
h.	Tiga tahun lamanya dia meringkuk dalam **tahanan**. **menahan**: to arrest, detain.	h.	For three years he languished in **detention**.
i.	Banyak uang Bambang habis di **pacuan**. **berpacu:** to race, have a race	i.	Bambang lost a lot of money at the **race-course.**
j.	**Saluran air** itu penuh sampah, sebab itu tiap kali hari hujan, air melimpah ke jalan. **menyalurkan:** to channel	j.	That **gutter (drain)** is full of rubbish; that is why every time it rains the water overflows onto the road.
k.	Berapa buah **saluran**	k.	How many television

televisi Jakarta? — **channels** has Jakarta?

l. Presiden Indonesia mengingatkan kepada buruh dan karyawan, bahwa mogok masih tetap terlarang dan apabila ada tuntutan, supaya hal itu disalurkan melalui **saluran-saluran** tertentu.
   l. The President of Indonesia warned the labourers and workers that strikes were still forbidden and that if there were demands they should be directed through the proper **channels**.
m. Di mana kauletakkan **saringan** teh?
   menyaring: to strain, filter
   m. Where did you put the tea **strainer**?

XIII.E.1. Remarks: We have learnt that **the suffix -an** added to a verb root may form **a noun** indicating **the object of the action** or **the result of the action** (see Langkah Baru, Book One, 9. 10. A. & B.).
i.e. **makanan**: s.t. to be eaten, **pakaian**: s.t. to be worn
tulisan: s.t. written, **masakan**: s.t. cooked, **kiriman:** s.t. sent
A **noun** so derived may also indicate **the place where the action occurs** or is **performed** or **the instrument with which the action is performed.**

XIII.E.2. When **the root -an form** follows a noun, thus **forming a compound** it has **an adjectival function**. Note that **the English equivalent** for **such a compound** may be **a compound** or **a single word.**

a. Kadang-kadang di negerinya sendiri dia merasa seperti **orang buangan.**
   a. Sometimes in his own country he feels like an **exile/outcast**.
b. Kenapa barang-barang ini murah sekali harganya? Mungkinkah **barang curian?**
   b. Why are these things so cheap? Is it possible that they are **stolen goods?**
c. Rumah itu bukan rumah pribadinya, melainkan **rumah sewaan.**
   c. That house isn't his own, but it is a **rented one.**
d. Dia membeli mobil itu dengan **uang pinjaman.**
   d. He bought that car with **borrowed money.**
e. Berapa ekor **kuda pacuan** Pak Kasim?
   e. How many **racehorses** does Mr. Kasim have?
f. Bagaimana **orang tahanan** itu melarikan diri dari penjara, yang dijaga begitu ketat?
   f. How could **the detainee** escape from a prison which is so tightly guarded?

XIII.E.1.&.2. Exercises

Translate the following sentences into Bahasa Indonesia.

a. I met Bambang, Tuti and a few friends at the race course yesterday. We saw a few really beautiful **racehorses**.

b. 'I like eating steamed vegetables, but unfortunately I don't have a **steamer**,' said Ratna.

c. Be careful going across that **foot bridge**, because it is very slippery, it has been raining.

d. Udin fell off the **swing** in the backyard. He had a cut on his head and it was bleeding. I quickly cleaned it and got a piece of clean cloth to bandage the wound.

e. At first my neighbour didn't realise that the man was trying to sell her **stolen goods**.

f. Although he has **clothes hooks** in his bedroom, he never hangs his clothes on them. His clothes are scattered about on the floor.

g. I want to watch the television national news. What time is the national news and on which **channel**?

XIII.F. Ber- + noun root verb

1. We have already seen that the prefix **ber-** can be attached to certain nouns to form a verb. In verbs of this form **ber-** among other things, conveys the idea of possessing or using the thing expressed by the noun (see Langkah Baru, Book One, 11.6. A, B, C). Study the following sentences, observing carefully the form and meaning of the words in bold; then master the sentences.

a.	Kami tidak **beruang**, jadi tidak bisa membeli bir.	a.	We didn't **have money**, so we couldn't buy beer.
b.	Hari hujan, tetapi mereka tidak basah, karena mereka **berpayung**.	b.	It rained, but they didn't get wet, because they **had an umbrella.**
c.	Dia **berkemeja sutera** dan **bercelana wol**.	c.	**He was wearing a silk shirt** anda **pair of woollen trousers.**
d.	Siapa nama orang yang **ber-gigi emas** itu?	d.	What's the name of that person with **a gold tooth?**
e.	Kaki kanannya harus di-potong dan sekarang dia **berkaki kayu.**	e.	His right leg had to be amputated and now he **has a wooden leg.**

XIII.F.1. Remarks

Note that in expressions such as: **bergigi emas, gigi emas** is a compound noun to which ber- is affixed, giving the meaning **to have** or **to wear.**Other examples of this construction are: **berkemeja sutera, bercelana wol** and **berkaki kayu,** etc.

XIII.F.2. Ber- + noun root + -kan verb.

Some **ber- + noun root verbs** have a following noun as an adjectival complement; they frequently take the suffix **-kan.**

e.g: Dia **bersenjatakan parang.**
He was armed with a machete. The idea is **he has a machete** and is using it as a weapon.
Amat **berselimutkan kain sarung.**
Amat **has covered himself with a sarong.**
or: Amat **is using a sarong as a blanket.**

In this construction, -kan draws attention to or emphasises the adjectival complement, i.e. **parang** and **kain sarung.**
Note when **a ber- + noun root verb** takes **the suffix -kan** it must have **a following noun.**
Study the following sentences, observing carefully the **form** and **meaning** of the words in bold. Then master the sentences.

a.	Saya melewati jembatan **berlantai(kan) papan.**	a.	I crossed a bridge with **a plank floor.**
b.	Kebanyakan pondok-pondok di daerah itu **beratap(kan) lalang, berdinding(kan) bambu** dan **berlantai(kan) papan.**	b.	The majority of huts in that region **have grass roofs, bamboo walls** and **wooden floors.**
c.	Perampok itu **bersenjata-(kan) sebilah parang**, ke-tika dia memasuki rumah Pak Karto dan mencuri perhiasan, barang yang berharga dan uang.	c.	The robber **was armed with a machete** when he broke into Pak Karto's house and stole jewellery, valuables and money.
d.	Piring-piring, cangkir dan tadah yang **bertepikan ukir-an emas** itu bagus sekali, te-tapi harganya sangat mahal.	d.	The plates, cups and saucers with **a gold decorated rim** are very beautiful, but the price is very expensive.
e.	Kursi dan meja kayu jati yang **berhiaskan ukiran yang indah ini** dipesannya dari Japara.	e.	He ordered these teak chairs and tables which are **decorat-ed with beautiful carving** from Japara.

f.	Perkawinan seharusnyalah **berdasar(kan) cinta kasih, kesetiaan, percaya-mempercayai, dan harga-menghargai.**	f.	Marriage should **be based on love, loyalty, mutual trust and mutual respect.**
g.	Botol-botol yang **berisi(kan) obat-obat** sebaiknya disimpan dalam lemari yang berkunci dan jauh dari jangkauan anak-anak.	g.	Bottles **containing medicine** are best kept in a cupboard with a lock and far out of the reach of the children.
h.	Orang-orang yang **bernama(kan) nama Arab,** seperti: Rakhman, Aziz, Abdullah, Husin, Hayati, Fatimah, Nuraini biasanya beragama Islam.	h.	People **with Arabic names** such as Rakhman, Aziz, Abdullah, Husin, Hayati, Fatimah and Nuraini are usually Muslims.
i.	Waktu dia berangkat dari rumah untuk mendaki gunung itu dia tidak **berbekal(kan) apa-apa.**	i.	When he set out from home to climb the mountain he **didn't have any provisions.**
j.	Pagi hari, pada waktu sembahyang subuh kelihatan seorang laki-laki, keluar dari pondok **berselubung(kan) kain sarung.**	j.	In the morning, at the time of the dawn prayer, a man was seen emerging from a hut **wrapped in a sarong.**

XIII.F.1.&.2. Exercises

Translate the following sentences using the construction of **ber + noun root** or **ber + noun root + -kan** form. Where both constructions are possible use the latter.

a. That house hasn't got a floor yet.
b. Is he armed? What is he armed with?
c. He lives in a big house with a tiled roof.
d. You must not listen to stories based on rumours.
e. Did he have a batik shirt on?

XIII.G. Additional Exercises

From the list accompanying the following group of sentences select the appropriate word for each sentence. Then translate the sentences into English. Use a dictionary for unfamiliar words.

1. **dasar, dasar-dasar, dasarnya, berdasar, berdasarkan, didasarkan**

a. Walaupun guru itu sering marah, pada ______________ dia orang yang baik hati, suka menolong.
b. Apa buktinya, bahwa dia yang mencuri mesin tulis itu? Tuduhan Anda itu sama sekali tidak ______________.
c. Apa itu yang mengkilat pada ______________ kolam itu?
d. Hukuman seperti itu bertentangan dengan ______________ perikemanusiaan.
e. Sebelum mereka dikirim ke negara Arab itu, mereka harus mempelajari bahasa Arab dan ______________ agama Islam.
f. Pilem itu ______________ pada penderitaan dan perjuangan hidup sekelompok manusia dalam Perang Dunia ke II.
g. Apakah gerakan politik yang baru didirikan itu ______________ ajaran agama Kristen?

2. **senjata, bersenjata, bersenjatakan, mempersenjatai, dipersenjatai.**

a. Rakyat desa itu keluar ______________ parang, keris, tombak dan senapang untuk membunuh harimau yang ganas itu.
b. Di rumah itu ditemukan berbagai ______________ moderen yang bakal digunakan pemberontak untuk menggulingkan pemerintah.
c. 'Orang tahanan yang lari dari penjara itu ______________, dan mungkin berbahaya,' kata polisi kepada kepala desa.
d. 'Anak laki-laki yang baru saja berusia dua belas tahun, dilatih perang gerilya, kemudian mereka ______________,' kata wartawan itu menyambung ceritanya.
e. 'Dari mana mereka dapat uang untuk ______________ ribuan rakyat?' tanya salah seorang yang hadir dalam pertemuan itu.

XIII.H. Penggunaan bahasa (Language Usage)

Penggunaan kata dan ungkapan (use of words and phrases)
Perhatikanlah bentuk dan arti kata-kata yang dicetak tebal dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. Kemudian kuasailah kalimat-kalimat itu.
Observe carefully the **form** and the **meaning** of the words in bold type in the following sentences. Then master the sentences

1. The use of the words **suami, istri** and **kawin** with **their derivatives**

a. **Suami** Aminah sudah lanjut usianya — dua puluh lima tahun lebih tua dari Aminah.

a. Aminah's **husband** is advanced in years (is elderly) — twenty five years older than Aminah.

b. Fatimah **istrinya** yang keberapa?

b. What number **wife of his** is Fatimah?

	Indonesian	English
c.	Masih adakah **kawin paksa** di daerah itu sekarang?	Are there still **forced marriages** in that region?
d.	'Aku dikhianati suamiku. Sejak itu aku bertekad tidak akan **bersuami/kawin** lagi,' kata Dini.	'My husband was unfaithful to me. From then on, I made up my mind never **to marry** again,' said Dini.
e.	Salim belum mau **beristri/kawin**, karena dia belum dapat pekerjaan tetap.	Salim doesn't want **to marry** yet, because he hasn't got a permanent job.
f.	Sdr. Hadi mau **beristrikan/kawin dengan** gadis yang bagaimana?	What kind of girl do you want **to marry**, Mr. Hadi?
g.	Saya tidak mau **bersuamikan/kawin dengan** sembarang orang saja. Saya mau berhati-hati, karena tidak mau masuk statistik perkawinan yang gagal.	I don't want to **marry with** just anyone. I want to be careful, because I don't want to be one of the statistics of failed marriages.
h.	Saya mau **memperistri/beristrikan/mengawini** gadis yang peka, biar mengerti pribadi saya, karena saya orang yang sangat sukar dimengerti.	I want **to marry** a sensitive girl, so that she can understand me, because I'm very difficult to understand.
i.	Mana mau orang **mempersuami/bersuamikan/mengawini** lelaki seperti itu? Orang yang hanya mementingkan diri sendiri!	How would anyone want **to marry** a man like that? A person who only thinks of himself!
j.	Pak Haji Kasim mau **memperistrikan/mengawinkan** anaknya yang bernama Abdullah dengan anak seorang saudagar yang kaya, tetapi Abdullah menolak.	Mr. Haji Kasim wanted **to marry (off)** his son named Abdullah to the daughter of a rich merchant, but Abdullah refused.

XIII.I. The use of the words **juga** and **pula**

Pahamkanlah **pemakaian**, **arti** dan **posisi** kata **juga** dan **pula** dalam kalimat-kalimat yang berikut. (Note the **use**, **meaning** and **position** of the words **juga** and **pula** in the following sentences).

1. **Juga** in the following sentences means **also**, **too**, or **as well** according to the context. It qualifies a **noun** or a **noun phrase**; a noun, remember, being the name of a person, place, thing, quality or activity.

Pula in the following sentences means **also, again, the same** or **so** according to the context. It qualifies **a clause**, a clause being either a simple sentence, or a component of a complex sentence that can stand on its own, i.e. each with its own subject and predicate.

a.	**Air mukanya juga** memperlihatkan isi hati yang sungguh. (taken from the text)	a.	**His expression too** showed the sincerity of his feelings.
b.	**Air mukanya memperlihatkan pula** isi hati yang sungguh.	b.	**His expression also showed** the sincerity of his feelings.
c.	Kemarin dia datang ke rumah saya, **hari ini juga.**	c.	Yesterday he came to my house and **today as well.**
d.	Kemarin dia datang ke rumah saya, hari ini **dia datang pula.**	d.	Yesterday he came to my house and today **he came again (called again).**
e.	**Sdr. juga** tinggal di rumah itu?	e.	Are **you also** living in that house?
f.	**Sdr. tinggal di rumah itu pula?**	f.	**Are you living in that house also/too?**
g.	Gambar ini bagus dan **yang itu bagus pula.**	g.	This picture is beautiful and **so is that one.**
h.	Gambar ini bagus dan **yang itu juga.**	h.	This picture is beautiful and **that one is too.**
i.	Berjalan baik untuk kesehatan. **Berenang juga.**	i.	Walking is good for health. **Swimming is too.**
j.	Merah adalah warna kesukaannya. **Biru juga.**	j.	Red is her favourite colour. **Blue is too.**
k.	Dia membawa roti, mentega, keju dan **juga minuman.**	k.	He brought bread, butter, cheese and **drinks as well.**
l.	Banyak sekali pengangguran di Indonesia sekarang, di Australia **demikian pula.**	l.	There's a lot of unemployment in Indonesia now, and in Australia **it is the same.**
m.	Kenapa **dia membawa minuman pula?**	m.	Why **did she also bring drinks?**

XIII.I.2. When **juga** qualifies the clause as it does in the following sentences, it means **anyway, all the same, the same. Juga** here indicates that the subjects **persist in doing** what **the verb** indicates, **or continues to be in the state** that **the adverb** indicates.

a.	Dia tidak diundang, tetapi	a.	He wasn't invited, but **he**

	dia datang juga.		**came anyway.**
b.	Ibu melarang Amin merokok, tetapi **dia merokok juga.**	b.	Mother forbade Amin to smoke but **he smoked all the same.**
c.	**Janganlah merokok juga!**	c.	**Don't keep on smoking!** or: **Don't smoke any more!**
d.	Dia banyak merokok, **sebanyak dulu juga.**	d.	He smokes a lot, **as much as he did before. (Just as much as he did before.)**
e.	Dulu dia peminum. **Demikian jugakah dia sekarang?**	e.	He used to be a heavy drinker. **Is he still the same now?**
f.	**Sdr. masih tinggal di rumah itu juga?**	f.	**Are you still living in the same house?**

XIII.I.3. When **juga** follows **an adjective** as in the following sentences, it means **rather** or **quite.** It conveys the idea of surprise.

a.	Aduh! **Mahal juga** makanan di sini!	a.	Goodness! Food is **rather expensive** here!
b.	Wah! **Menyenangkan juga** hasil ujiannya!	b.	My! His examination results are **rather satisfactory!**
c.	Dengarlah, **pemarah juga** rupanya guru itu.	c.	Listen! That teacher seems **quite quick-tempered.**

XIII.I.4. When **pula** is used in combination with **a question word** it conveys the idea of puzzlement.

a.	**Mengapa pula** kamu mau ikut? Lebih baik kamu tinggal di rumah.	a.	**Why is it** that you want to come? You'd better stay at home. Or: **Why ever** did you want to come? You'd...
b.	**Apa pulakah** yang dimarahkannya?	b.	**What ever is** he angry about **now?**
c.	**Siapa pula** yang berani melawan dia?	c.	**Who on earth** would dare to take him on?
d.	**Bagaimana pula** dia bisa beranggapan begitu?	d.	**How on earth** could he have that opinion?

XIII.I.5. After studying the usage and function of **juga** and **pula** in the previous sentences note carefully the meaning of the following **negative sentences.**

a. i. **Saya tidak pula mengerti.**

ii.	**Saya tidak mengerti pula.**
i.&ii.	I didn't understand either.
iii.	**Saya belum pula mengerti.**
iv.	**Saya belum mengerti pula.**
iii.&iv.	I haven't understood either.

Note in sentences a) i, ii, iii & iv **pula** qualifies a clause.

b.	i.	**Dia juga** tidak mengerti.
		He too/also didn't understand.
	or:	**He** didn't understand **either**.
	ii.	**Dia juga** belum mengerti.
		He too/also hasn't understood.
	or:	**He** hasn't understood **either**.

Note in sentences b) i & ii **juga** qualifies nouns/pronouns.

c.	i.	**Dia tidak juga mengerti.**
	ii.	**Dia tidak mengerti juga.**
	i.&ii.	He **still/just didn't** understand.
d.	i.	**Dia belum juga mengerti.**
	ii.	**Dia belum mengerti juga.**
	i.&ii.	**He still hasn't understood.**
	or:	**He hasn't understood yet.**

Note in sentences c) i&ii and d) i&ii **juga** qualifies a clause.

XIII.J. Memperluas kosa kata (Vocabulary Expansion)
Most of the words required in the following exercises occur in the text of this chapter. If not use a dictionary.

1. Complete the following sentences by filling in the blanks with appropriate animal sounds.

a. Ayam jantan ________________.
b. Ayam betina ________________.
c. Anjing itu tidak berhenti-hentinya ________________.
d. Harimau dan singa ________________.
e. Kambing________________.
f. Lembu ________________.
g. Burung________________.
h. Tikus ________________.
i. Kucing ________________.

2. Give a word opposite in meaning to each of the following words in bold.

a. **menengadah:** ________________
b. **mengangguk:** ________________
c. **melekatkan** topinya: ________________
d. **membentangkan** tikar: ________________
e. **menghulu**: ________________

3. Give a synonym for each of the following words.

a. tohor: ________________
b. melewati: ________________
c. nampak: ________________
d. meloncat: ________________
e. menjenguk:________________

XIII.A. English Version

THE PLANTATION ON THE PROMONTORY

I crossed a bridge of timber planks. They were loose, rotting and broken. Ahead stretched a small promontory. There was a plantation there. On the shore was a large tree silhouetted tall and dark against the sky; and on the beach on the other side was an upturned fishing boat. On the other side of the river, where the water was shallow and flowed slowly, grew reeds. Someone passed in a boat, going up-stream. He was punting along with a long pole. A moment later he had disappeared from view.

From the direction of the plantation, a cock could be heard crowing. A shack with a thatched roof was visible through the sheltering leaves. In the middle of the plantation were growing tall flowering maize plants. A large grasshopper suddenly leapt up in front of me. The rays of the sun glistened on the raindrops scattered about like beads.

I turned in the direction of the plantation. My soaked sandshoes felt slippery as I inched my way across the trunk of a rubber tree bridging a ditch at the edge of the main road.

From the bridge, leading in the direction of the shack, was a straight path, shaded with pawpaw trees, banana clumps and sugar-cane. Their shadows nodded as though greeting me. Fowls ran clucking in all directions. Grasshoppers and lizards leapt out of my path. A dog barked in the distance. A man who was holding a fishing rod, dressed in black like a Badui, watched me approach. I nodded in greeting.

'Excuse me,' I said addressing him, 'could I buy a stick of sugar-cane?' Then I looked around to show how interested I was in the thriving clumps of sugar-cane. I took off my hat which was heavy because it was wet. The rays of the sun now shone straight onto the crown of my head. And from behind

the low hills could be seen the billowing stratocumulus piled up like heaps of cotton wool. The man looked me up and down.

'Certainly, you may. Where are you going?' He put the fishing rod on the hen-coop under the house.

'To Ujung Gading!'

'Ujung Gading?' The tone of his voice was as though he knew the little town well. 'And where from?'

'From Lubuk Sikaping!'

He nodded, then looked up. 'Ros! Ros!' he called. 'Get the machete!'

I heard the sound of footsteps clatter-clatter over the floor of the house and a woman appeared at the door. It seemed that she had been observing me approach as she stood blocking the dark door-way. She came down and handed a large machete to the man. As she stepped down her chignon came undone. The upper part of her breasts were exposed and veined with blue. While doing up her hair she slowly went back up.

'Come up for a moment,' she said. There was the sound of her unrolling the mat near the door.

'Yes, go up for awhile,' said the man. He went into the plantation.

'Thanks!' I said 'It's very pleasant here!'

I took off my shoes, tipping out the water that had accumulated in them. I wrung out my black socks and put them back into the shoes. I went up the steps and sat at the door facing towards the river with my legs dangling down. The woman was rocking a baby in a cradle of batik cloth. On the kitchen shelf over the fire-place was hanging some maize for seed. Whisps of smoke were rising from the fire-place on which was a kettle thickly coated with black from charcoal and soot. From the middle of the plantation came the sound of the rustling of leaves and the thud of someone chopping sugar cane.

'What are you going to Ujung Gading for?' asked the woman. 'Are you being transferred?'

'No, an inspection tour!' I lied. On this journey far up country, which had lasted almost ten days since I set out from Bandung, I always made a point of saying to the people that I passed that I had come from somewhere close at hand, as though I were not on my way to visit my parents whom I had not seen for eight years. This was important for me, for I did not want to cause people trouble or worry them unnecessarily.

The woman poured the brew of coffee leaves from the kettle and placed it in front of me. From the shelf she took a hand of sweet fragrant bananas, and they too were placed before me. 'Please, help yourself!' she said, and went back to swinging the baby.

From the expression in her eyes it was clear that there was much more she wanted to ask. But she restrained herself. I just mused. I placed my hat beside me and peeled a banana. From time to time a cool breeze which restled the banana leaves and the sugar-cane blew onto my face. This made me feel more reluctant to set out again through the glaring heat on the main road. From up here I could see a clear view of the promontory. There was a boat going swiftly down-stream. In the boat was a man wearing a hat, paddling

rather fast. In front of him were heaped up clusters of bananas. The sound of his oar could be heard against the side of the boat — more and more faintly, until it vanished around the bend of the reach of the river. Close to the broken down bridge a bit further on near the reach, were a few sago palms. Their leaves trembled in the wind as though eager to shake off the raindrops that still clung to them. The sun, which was now far to the west, was shining on the surface of the river reach and it was gleaming. Right over there, in the midst of the rubber plantation across the main road the wood pigeons were calling to each other. In a few places the leaves of the rubber had turned yellow and were falling, scattered everywhere.

The man reappeared carrying a stick of sugar cane, the skin of which was yellowish green. It was the kind of sugar-cane that was known as the sweetest in this region.

'Would you like me to peel it straight away?' he said looking up. I nodded. He cut the sugar cane into two and peeled it beneath a banana clump. After peeling it, he then cut it into small pieces and placed them on a banana leaf. After he had peeled about six sections, he wrapped up the pieces of cane and handed them to me.

'Will you eat them here, or on the road?'

'Just on the road. Very many thanks. It was a lot of trouble to peel them and all.'

I went down, and put the package of sugar-cane into my bag. I took my time putting on my shoes and then I slung my raincoat over my shoulder.

'How much should I pay you?'

'Pay for what? Don't worry!'

'Heavens, no! I did mean to buy them just now, I do have money.'

'There is no one who is selling, and so there is no one to be paid.' He laughed light-heartedly. His wife was watching from the door.

I felt in my coat pocket. He raised his hand as though holding up a cupboard that was about to fall.

'No, don't. There is no need to pay. Really!'

I knew the character of the people of this region. His expression too showed that he was serious. I had for a long time mixed with people who wished to measure everything with money and this had really influenced me. I remembered again the atmosphere of the scene around me, so I did not take out any money.

'In that case thanks, then.'

I put on my hat.

'Let me take my leave now. I must be on my way again. Many thanks for the drink.'

BAB KEEMPAT BELAS

(Chapter XIV)

XIV.A. Bacaan (Reading Passage)

Bacalah pelajaran di bawah ini dengan saksama. (Read the lesson below carefully.)

MARAH

Kertas ceramah yang sudah disiapkan oleh pembantu pribadinya kelupaan. Judulnya pun tak ingat. Maka ia pun bagai sebuah kertas kosong di depan pertemuan itu. **Corong**[1] telah di muka mulutnya, ia masih belum tahu harus bilang apa.

Para hadirin tampaknya amat serius. Mereka datang dari daerah-daerah yang jauh. Muka **pedalaman**[2] mereka menunjukkan **keramahan**,[3] **perhatian**,[4] serta juga **kekaguman**.[5] Paling tidak mereka mengharapkan akan menerima sesuatu yang belum pernah mereka ketahui sebelumnya. Sebuah **ide**.[6] Sebuah **uraian**[7] yang segar. Penuh dengan data-data. Sebuah analisa yang tajam. Dan kemudian tentu saja kesimpulan yang **antap**,[8] **matang**,[9] luas dan penuh dengan harapan.

Rasanya berat sekali untuk memenuhi harapan orang-orang itu tanpa kertas kerja pembantunya. Ia sudah terbiasa untuk membaca saja. **Mendongengkan**,[10] tanpa mengurus apa sebetulnya yang harus dikatakan. Ia sadar detik itu juga bahwa ia hanya mulut **kepundan**.[11] Tempat lewat dari **cucur**[12] **keringat**[13] para pembantu-pembantu ahlinya. Jadi tak ada jalan lain. Ia **menempuh**[14] jalan yang paling gampang. Secara psikologis ia harus membuat orang-orang itu **lengah**.[15] Maka ia pun marah.

Dua jam ia marah.

Ia tak tahu dari mana mendapat kekuatan untuk **menyemprot**.[16] Mulutnya tiba-tiba menjadi **garang**.[17] Ia serang apa saja yang **terlintas**[18] yang kira-kira dapat diserang. Kata-kata yang dipakainya juga tidak bisa dipilih. Dengan tegang, panas, galak dan **bersemangat**,[19] ia seperti **membanting-banting**[20] seluruh ruangan itu. Ia **meremas**[21] dan menginjak-injaknya dalam kritik yang sangat tajam.

Hadirin yang semula **terbelalak**[22] melihat **gelagat**nya,[23] tiba-tiba menundukkan muka mereka. **Rata-rata**[24] di kursi mereka **mengkeret**[25] seperti sebatu es yang cair perlahan-lahan. Seluruh ruangan sepi. Aduhai sepi sekali! Tak ada yang berani **berkutik**[26] bahkan tidak ada yang berani menggerakkan kaki mereka. Kalau tak salah **separuh**nya[27] **menderita semutan**,[28] sakit pinggang dan **pening**,[29] tatkala kemudian amarahnya itu berakhir.

Tak ada yang berani **keplok tangan**[30] waktu itu berhenti. Tapi hampir semua orang kemudian **serentak**[31] berdiri. Mereka berada di puncak ketegangan. Dan waktu ia berjalan dari podium membelah mereka, untuk

kemudian keluar — ia merasa seperti sebuah pisau yang sedang **mengiris**[32] roti yang sudah keras. Tak seorang pun yang tersenyum kepadanya. Tapi tak seorang pun juga yang berani menatap kepadanya.

Di dalam mobil ia mencoba mengingat-ingat apa yang sudah diucapkannya. Tapi seperti sebuah mimpi yang sudah lewat satu mingguan. Ia lupa, hanya samar-samar sekali. Ia begitu cepat, bersemangat dan lancar. Tak ada lagi yang bisa diingatnya. Sementara itu badannya terasa kosong. Berbeda dengan keadaan sebelumnya. Ia merasa lega. Lapar. Ingin sekali **bersanggama**.[33]

Hal pertama yang dilakukannya setelah sampai di rumah adalah mencari kertas kerja yang ditulis oleh pembantu pribadinya. Kertas kerja itu terletak dengan rapi di atas meja. Hanya Tuhan yang tahu, kenapa ia sampai lupa membawanya. Segera ia membalik-balik kertas tersebut. Rupa-rupanya tidak kurang dari tiga orang pembantunya yang telah **mengerahkan segenap tenaga**[34] untuk membuat teks tersebut.

Ia mengambil kacamata, lalu mulai membaca. Benar-benar sebuah laporan yang teliti. Kata-katanya terpilih. Sangat taktis. Kedengarannya cerdas, tangkas dan luas. Juga dalam dan setiap saat bisa diartikan ganda. **Menjurus**[35] ke satu hal, akan tetapi tidak **terjebak**[36] kepada formulasi-formulasi konkrit, sehingga setiap kali maknanya bisa ditafsirkan lain. Sebuah **perpaduan**[37] antara keahlian sastra dan penguasaan data.

Akan tetapi baru seperempat jam membaca, kantuknya **menyelinap**.[38] Ia pun tertidur di kursi itu. Sore hari ia baru bangun. Istrinya sudah datang. Ada kopi di atas meja. Juga ada sebuah koran sore. Istrinya **tersenyum simpul**,[39] sangat manis. Ia tidak mengerti apakah itu berarti hadiah untuk ulang tahunnya yang akan datang, atau karena ada permintaan menyusul yang sedang disiapkannya.

Waktu ia membaca koran sore, segalanya menjadi terang. "Belum pernah ada uraian yang terus-terang, pengupasan yang tajam, keberanian yang bertanggung jawab serta semangat yang mengandung optimisme seperti ini. Pidato yang diucapkannya dengan tanpa teks, sama sekali di luar kepala selama 2 jam, benar-benar membawa perspektip baru, memberikan harapan serta meninggalkan pada kita imij yang sama sekali lain pada kepribadian beliau. **Tak dapat disangsikan lagi**[40] bahwa kaum muda menyambut beliau dengan sangat antusias. Dari pribadi semacam itu sudah pasti akan lahir tindakan-tindakan yang jelas konkrit dan tidak saja realistis akan tetapi tepat," tulis koran tersebut.

Pejabat itu termenung.

Mungkin agak dilebih-lebihkan kalau dikatakan bahwa sejak itu ia banyak berubah. Yang jelas, kalau ia menghadapi kesempatan untuk bicara, kalau ia harus berhadapan dengan orang banyak, ia tidak lagi mencari orang untuk menyusun data-data. Ia akan datang langsung ke **mimbar**.[41] Bicara di luar kepala, apa saja yang terlintas di kepalanya. Dan tentu saja marah, marah, marah sebanyak-banyaknya.

Itulah sebabnya ia disukai.

Putu Wijaya

XIV.B. Wordlist

Although a wordlist is provided for each reading passage, you should use a dictionary for unfamiliar words to broaden your vocabulary and understanding of the meaning of the words which may vary in different contexts.

1. corong: microphone
2. pedalaman: inland areas
3. keramahan: friendliness
4. perhatian: attentiveness
5. kekaguman: admiration
6. ide: idea
7. uraian: analysis, diagnosis explanation
8. antap: solid, sound
9. matang: mature
10. mendongengkan: to relate narrate
11. kepundan: crater
12. cucur: a flow
13. keringat: sweat, perspiration
14. menempuh: to take, go through, face s.t.
15. lengah: dawdling, inattentive membuat orang-orang itu lengah: to provide some kind of diversion for those people
16. menyemprot: to spray, squirt
17. garang: fierce, aggressive
18. terlintas: to cross o's mind
19. bersemangat: enthusiastic
20. membanting-banting: to beat, attack, lash
21. meremas: to crush, squeeze
22. terbelalak: boggle-eyed
23. gelagat: behaviour
24. rata-rata: all, nearly all
25. mengkeret: to shrink
26. berkutik: to move slightly, stir
27. separuh: half
28. menderita semutan: 'to go to sleep' of arm or leg: referring to the sensation of pins and needles
29. pening: dizzy
30. keplok tangan: to clap, applaud
31. serentak: all at once, all together (of a movement), all (doing, speaking, happening) at the same time
32. mengiris: to slice
33. bersanggama: to have coitus, have sex
34. mengerahkan segenap tenaga: to work with all o's might, do o's utmost
35. menjurus: to focus
36. terjebak: fallen into
37. perpaduan: blend
38. menyelinap: to creep up on/ over, slip into/away
39. tersenyum simpul: to give a smile
40. tak dapat disangsikan lagi: there can no longer be any doubt
41. mimbar: podium, rostrum

XIV.C. Comprehension

Jawablah pertanyaan-pertanyaan di bawah ini dengan kalimat yang **lengkap** dalam Bahasa Indonesia.

1. Apa sebabnya tokoh dalam teks ini berdiri di muka corong untuk beberapa lama diam, tak tahu apa yang harus dikatakannya?

2. Apa yang diharapkan oleh hadirin yang berdatangan dari jauh dari orang yang memberi ceramah itu?
3. Bagaimanakah caranya dia keluar dari kesulitan yang dihadapinya?
4. Terangkanlah dengan kata-kata Anda sendiri suasana dalam ruangan itu sejak dia mulai berbicara sampai dia meninggalkan ruangan itu.
5. Begitu dia tiba di rumahnya dia membaca kertas kerja yang kelupaan, yang disiapkan oleh pembantu pribadinya. Bagaimanakah pendapatnya mengenai kertas kerja itu?
6. Waktu dia bangun dari tidurnya, apa yang sudah tersedia di atas meja?
7. Apakah yang dimuat dalam koran sore mengenai ceramahnya?
8. Sejak hari itu tokoh itu jauh berubah. Dalam hal apa dia berubah?

XIV.D. Tata bahasa (Grammar)

Ulangan dan tambahan (Revision and Development)

Pe- + root + -an or per- + root + -an derivatives forming abstract nouns.

We have already seen that **pe- + root + -an** or **per- + root + -an** are usually abstract nouns signifying the action, process or result of the activity of the verb from which they are derived. (See Langkah Baru, Book One, 11.10.A.&B.)

e.g. **pertengkaran**: quarrel, the action of the verb **bertengkar**
pembuatan: the making, the process of the verb **membuat**
pengalaman: experience, the result of the verb **mengalami**

In addition in some cases they indicate the object of that activity.

e.g. **pemberian:** gift, the object of the act of giving
pertanyaan: question, the object of the act of asking

This type of noun formation is very productive, and new examples of such derivatives are appearing continuously.

A noun so derived may also indicate **the place** where the action **occurs** or **is performed:**

e.g. **penginapan:** lodging, accommodation, the place where the action occurs or is performed.

The verb is **menginap** meaning **to lodge** or **stay overnight.**

This type of noun derivative may also indicate **the premises, with machinery or apparatus**, in which the activity is performed,

e.g. **penggilingan**: mill

The verb is **menggiling** meaning **to mill** or **to grind**

XIV.D.1. Pe- + root + -an nouns

These following derivatives are usually closely associated with **me- transitive verbs. The roots** from which **such verbs are derived** may also be **adjectives** or **nouns.**

Study the following sentences observing carefully the **derivation** and **meaning** of the words in bold type; then master the sentences in which they occur.

a. Dalam ceramahnya itu dia	a. In that speech of his, he

	mengupas berbagai persoalan.		**analysed (dealt with)** various issues.
b.	Mereka belum pernah mendengar **pengupasan** yang terus terang dan tajam seperti itu.	b.	They had never before heard an **analysis** as frank and sharp (penetrating) as that.
c.	Waktu saya di Solo saya melihat orang **membuat** batik.	c.	When I was in Solo, I saw people **making** batik.
d.	**Pembuatan** sehelai batik-tulis yang halus makan waktu kira-kira dua bulan.	d.	**The making** of a finely drawn piece of batik takes about two months.
e.	**Pembuatan** gula pasir dilakukan di pabrik, tidak seperti **pembuatan** gula aren yang dikerjakan di rumah.	e.	The **making (production)** of castor sugar is done in a factory, unlike the **making** of palm sugar which is done in homes (a cottage industry).
f.	Dia paling kurang **menguasai** tiga bahasa asing.	f.	He had **mastered** at least three foreign languages.
g.	**Penguasaan**nya dalam bahasa asing itu berguna sekali dalam pekerjaannya.	g.	His **mastery** of that foreign language was very useful in his work.
h.	Jalan-jalan di desa itu sudah **diterangi** lampu listrik sekarang.	h.	The roads in that village are **illuminated (lit)** by electric lights now.
i.	Walaupun **penerangan listrik** sudah ada, air leding belum.	i.	Even though there is **electric lighting** there is not yet a piped water supply.
j.	Dia harus mengunjungi daerah-daerah untuk **menerangkan** sikap, tindakan, rencana pembangunan pemerintah yang baru.	j.	He has to visit the districts to **explain** the attitude, measures and development plan of the new government.
k.	**Penerangan-penerangan** itu disalurkan melalui radio, surat-surat kabar setempat.	k.	The **explanations** were publicised by means of radio and local newspapers.
l.	Betulkah pengusaha pabrik itu **membedakan** buruh laki-laki dan perempuan mengenai upah, hak dan tugas?	l.	Is it true that the employer of that factory **distinguished** between men and women workers in respect of wages, rights and duties?
m.	Di paberik itu kelihatannya tidak ada sama sekali **pem-**	m.	At that factory it appeared that there was absolutely no

bedaan mengenai perlakuan terhadap buruh laki-laki dan buruh perempuan. — **discrimination** in treatment between male and female workers.

n. Karena dia sakit jantung dia harus **menghentikan** merokok, makan makanan yang berlemak. — n. Because he has heart trouble, he has **to stop** smoking and eating fatty foods.

o. Dia tidak keberatan makan makanan yang tawar, tetapi **penghentian** merokok yang paling berat baginya. — o. He doesn't object to eating bland foods, but **giving up** smoking is the most difficult for him.

p. Tahun berapa dan di mana buku itu **diterbitkan?** — p. What year and where **was** that book **published?**

q. Biaya **penerbitan** buku bergambar yang berwarna seperti ini, mahal sekali. — q. The cost of **publishing** a book with coloured illustrations such as this is very high.

r. Delegasi itu mengunjungi beberapa negara untuk mencoba **memasarkan** hasil bumi Indonesia, seperti cengkeh, kopi dll. — r. The delegation visited several countries to try **to market** Indonesian natural products such as cloves, coffee etc.

s. Perbaikilah taraf hidup petani dengan jalan meningkatkan produksi pertanian dan sekaligus mempersiapkan **pemasaran**nya. — s. Improve the standard of living of the peasant by increasing agricultural production, and at the same time make arrangements for the **marketing** of it.

XIV.D.2. Per- + root + -an nouns

These derivatives are usually closely associated with:

i. **ber- + root verbs,** or
ii. **memper- + root + -kan**, or
iii. **memper- + root -i**.

These derivatives, in addition to signifying **the object** of the verb or **the action, process** or **result of the activity of the verb** from which they are derived, may also indicate **the place at which an activity** or **action occurs**; in a few cases **the means used to produce the result of that activity.**

Study the following sentences observing carefully the **derivation** and **meaning** of the words in bold then master the sentences in which they occur.

a. Siapa nama pemuda yang **bertanya** itu? **Pertanyaan**nya tidak begitu jelas. — a. What's the name of the youth who **asked that question?** His **question** was not very clear.

b. Dia mengaku, bahwa dia telah **berbuat curang.**

b. He admitted that he **had done wrong.**

c. **Perbuatan curang** itu tentu tidak akan diulangnya lagi. Dia malu dan menyesal dengan kecurangannya.

c. That **dishonest act** certainly won't be repeated by him. He was ashamed and regretted his dishonesty.

d. Kita tidak boleh **berhenti** di sini. Nanti kita didenda.

d. We can't **stop** here. We'll be fined.

e. Ini **perhentian bis**. Bukankah itu jelas tertulis di sana?

e. This is a **bus stop**. Isn't it clearly written there?

f. Mengenai beberapa hal, pendapat Amin **berbeda** dengan pendapat teman-temannya.

f. Concerning various matters, Amin's view **differed** from that of his friends.

g. **Perbedaan** pendapat itu tidak meretakkan hubungan persahabatan antara Amin dan teman-temannya.

g. The **difference** of opinion didn't harm the friendly relations between Amin and his friends.

h. Jika ada serangan udara cepat-cepat kami mencari tempat **berlindung.**

h. If there is an air-raid we quickly look for a place to **shelter.**

i. Waktu zaman perang kami duduk berjam-jam dalam **lubang perlindungan.**

i. During the war we huddled for hours in an **air-raid shelter.**

j. Anak yang disiksa oleh orang tuanya itu tidak tahu ke mana mencari **perlindungan.**

j. That child who has been ill-treated by his parents doesn't know where to go to look for **protection.**

k. Sudahkah kamu **memperhitungkan** biaya perjalanan kamu: ongkos kapal terbang pulang pergi, ongkos penginapan, belanja dan kendaraan selama di Indonesia?

k. Have you **worked out** the expenses for your journey: the cost of a return air-ticket, the cost of accommodation, living expenses and transport while in Indonesia?

l. Menurut **perhitungan** saya paling kurang kamu harus membawa 2.000 dolar.

l. According to my **calculations** you will need to take at least $2,000.

m. Rombongan kesenian dari Indonesia itu akan **mempertunjukkan** tarian Bali, Jawa dan tari-tarian daerah lainnya.

m. The cultural group from Indonesia is going **to perform** Balinese and Javanese dances and dances from other regions.

n. **Pertunjukan** tarian itu akan diadakan tiga malam berturut-turut.

n. The dance **performances** will be held three nights in succession.

o. Kantornya yang baru **diperlengkapi** dengan meja tulis, kursi, lemari, mesin tulis dan telepon.

o. His new office is **equipped** with a desk, chairs, cupboards, a typewriter and a telephone.

p. Jadi, dengan pekerjaannya yang baru dia dapat kantor yang cukup besar dan **perlengkapan** seperlunya.

p. So, with his new job, he got a good-sized office with the necessary **equipment.**

q. Untuk **perlengkapan** kantornya itu dia tidak usah membayar sesen pun.

q. For the **furnishing of** that office of his he didn't have to pay a cent.

XIV.D.3. Pember- + root + -an nouns

These derivatives are closely associated with **member- + root + -kan verbs.**

Such verbs are few in number, but occur frequently in every day situations. The abstract nouns derived from these verbs too signify **the activity** or **the action of the verb** from which they are derived.

Study the following sentences carefully, paying special attention to **the derivation** and **meaning** of the words in bold. Then master the sentences in which they occur.

a. Karena beberapa hal paberik itu terpaksa **memberhentikan** seratus orang pekerjanya.

a. For various reasons, that factory was forced to **dismiss** one hundred workers.

b. '**Pemberhentian** pekerja-pekerja ini tidak dapat dielakkan,' kata pengusaha pabrik itu.

b. 'The **dismissal** of these workers was unavoidable,' said the manager of the factory.

c. Sebahagian dari transmigran itu akan **diberangkatkan** dari Jakarta dengan kapal laut menuju Pontianak.

c. A group of the transmigrants **will be transported** from Jakarta to Pontianak by boat.

d. **Pemberangkatan** transmigran yang berjumlah tiga ribu keluarga itu dilaksanakan secara bertahap.

d. **The transportation** of the transmigrants, who total 3,000 families, will be carried out in stages.

XIV.D.4. The **pe- + root + -an** and the **per- + root + -an** derivatives derived from **nouns**

Some of these derivatives **unlike** the previous ones **are not associated with verbs.** This type of noun formation indicates **an area characterised by a group of the things** indicated by **the root;** thus referring to them collectively.
However, **those which are associated with verbs** may either signify **the activity** or **action indicated by the verb** or indicate an **area characterised by a group of the things** indicated by the root.
In most cases the context makes clear which meaning is appropriate.
Study the following sentences carefully, paying special attention to the **derivation** and **meaning** of the words in bold. Then master the sentences in which they occur. Note **pedalaman** in sentence a). It is an exception.

a. Kebanyakan dari hadirin datang dari **pedalaman**. Muka **pedalaman** mereka menunjukkan keramahan, perhatian serta kekaguman.

a. The majority of the audience came from **inland (up-country).**Their **country** faces showed friendliness, interest and admiration.

b. Ribuan manusia menuju ibu kota tiap pagi datang dari **pedesaan** di sekitarnya untuk mencari nafkah hidup. Kota ini tidur dengan penduduk sekitar lima juta dan di siang hari melonjak jumlahnya.

b. Thousands of people headed for the capital every day, coming from **the villages (village areas)** around it, looking for a livelihood. This city sleeps with a population of around five million, and in the day, the number soars.

c. Kebun kopi dan teh biasanya banyak didapat di **daerah pe(r)gunungan.**

c. Coffee and tea plantations are mostly found in **the mountain region.**

d. Jelas fasilitas kota seperti listrik, telepon, air dan **perumahan** tidak mampu untuk menampung penambahan penduduk yang demikian pesatnya.

d. It is clear that urban facilities such as electricity, telephones, water and **housing** are not sufficient to handle such a rapid increase in population.

e. Tanah yang luas itu disediakan oleh pemerintah untuk **persawahan, perkebunan** dan **perkampungan** buat transmigran yang akan didatangkan bulan depan.

e. That wide area of land has been prepared by the government for **wet rice cultivation, plantations** and **villages** for the transmigrants who are going to be brought in next month.

f. Apa yang mereka ketahui tentang **perkebunan** cengkeh dan kopi misalnya? Pernahkah mereka **berkebun**

f. What do they know about **the cultivation** of cloves or coffee for example? Have they ever **worked on/cultivated** a

	cengkeh atau kopi?		clove or coffee plantation?
g.	Sebahagian besar dari transmigran itu tentu sudah banyak tahu tentang **per-sawahan,** karena peng-hidupan mereka dulu **bersawah.**	g.	Of course a large number of those transmigrants already know a lot about **wet rice cultivation** because they used to make their living **working the rice-fields.**

Why is it important to study word formation in such detail?
It is important because people sometimes use words that already exist as a basis for creating new ones they need. Thus a knowledge of how such words are made is important. Through this knowledge you are able to analyse the derivation of words you meet, see how they are made and then make an intelligent guess as to their meaning. In addition it makes them easier to remember.

XIV.D.1.2.3.&.4. Exercises
Make a sentence with each of the following words or derivatives, so that the meaning is clear. Then give the English equivalent of each sentence.

a.	penemuan	b.	pertemuan
c.	pembuatan	d.	perbuatan
e.	pemberhentian	f.	perhentian
g.	pembedaan	h.	perbedaan
i.	desa	j.	pedesaan
k.	rumah	l.	perumahan

XIV.E. Ke- + root + -an derivatives forming **abstract nouns**
We have already seen that abstract nouns may be derived with **ke- + verb + -an** and **ke- + adjective + -an.** (See Langkah Baru, Book One, 13.11. A.B.& 13.12.A.B.)
Derivatives of this kind occurring in the text of this chapter are the following: **keramahan, kekaguman, kekuatan, ketegangan, keberanian, keadaan** and **kesimpulan.**
You should be able to work out the roots and the meaning of these derivatives from what you have already learnt and the context in which they occur.
This type of noun formation is very common and new examples of some derivatives are appearing continuously.
The prefix ke- in combination with **the suffix -an** forms nouns from **various parts of speech.**
1. **Ke- + root + -an** derivatives derived from **adverbs, adjectives** and **intransitive verbs**

Study the following sentences, observing carefully the **form** and **meaning** of the words in bold.

a.	Saya tidak begitu senang kepada si Ali. **Kebiasaan**nya merokok dan membuang abu dan puntung rokok di mana saja yang paling tidak saya senangi.	a.	I don't particularly like Ali. His **habit** of smoking and scattering the cigarette ash and butts everywhere is what I dislike most.
b.	Orang yang mau menjadi polisi harus tinggi. Itu suatu **keharusan.** Itu sesuatu yang **harus.**	b.	A person who wants to be a policeman has to be tall. That is **a necessity (must).** That is something **necessary.**
c.	Jangan lupa membayar pajak! **Kewajiban**mu sebagai seorang warga negara. Membayar pajak sesuatu yang **wajib** bagi tiap warga negara.	c.	Don't forget to pay tax! It is your **duty (obligation)** as a citizen. Paying tax is something **obligatory** for every citizen.
d.	**Kepercayaan** saya kepadanya tidak berubah.	d.	My **trust** in him hasn't changed.
e.	Dia sudah kehilangan **kepercayaan** dari orang bawahannya.	e.	He has lost the **confidence** of his subordinates.
f.	Entah apa sebabnya dia sekarang banyak berubah, tidak ada **kepercayaan** pada dirinya sendiri.	f.	Heaven knows why, he has changed a lot now, he has no self-**confidence.**
g.	Kamu harus menghilangkan **kecurigaan**mu kepada dia, karena setahu saya, dia orang yang baik dan jujur.	g.	You must get rid of your **suspicion** about (**mistrust** of) him, because as far as I know he is a good and honest person.
h.	Janganlah tanam rasa **kebencian** di antara bangsa-bangsa yang datang untuk menetap di sini.	h.	Don't implant a feeling of **hatred** among the peoples who came to settle here.
i.	**Keinginan** pengungsi-pengungsi itu ialah untuk menetap di Australia.	i.	The **desire (wish)** of those refugees is to settle in Australia.
j.	Terlebih dahulu saya mengucapkan terima kasih kepada Saudara sekalian yang telah mengundang saya untuk memberi	j.	First of all I would like to express my thanks to you all for inviting me to give this lecture this evening. This is

Indonesian	English
ceramah malam ini.Ini adalah suatu **kehormatan** bagi saya	an **honour** for me.

XIV.E.2. Ke- + root + -an derivatives derived from **nouns.**
Study the following sentences, observing carefully the **form** and **meaning** of the words in bold.

Indonesian	English
a. Perkumpulan itu mempunyai **keanggotaan** yang berjumlah lebih kurang seratus orang.	a. That association has a **membership** which totals about one hundred.
b. Ahli bedah itu terkenal sekali, karena **keahliannya** membedah jantung.	b. That surgeon is very well-known because of his **skill** in heart operations.
c. Di kalangan mahasiswa Indonesia dewasa ini rasa **kedaerahan** sudah menipis.	c. Among Indonesian students now the feeling of **regionalism** is weakening (lessening).
d. Memang dari kecil dia sudah dididik **soal ketuhanan.**	d. Indeed, since he was a child he has been taught about **belief in God.**
e. Siapa yang dimaksudnya dengan 'orang yang **bersifat kebinatangan** dan yang tidak mengenal **kemanusiaan**'?	e. Who does he mean by 'a person who **behaves like a beast** and doesn't know **human compassion**'? (a person with **the qualities of a beast** who is ignorant of **humanity**).
f. Bendera dari semua **kebangsaan** berkibar di muka gedung Perserikatan Bangsa Bangsa. (PBB)	f. The flags of all **nationalities** are flying in front of the United Nations building. (UN)

XIV.E.3. Exercises
Other functions of **ke- + root + -an** are discussed in detail in Langkah Baru, Book One. See 16.8.A. and 17.13.A.B.C. — 17.17.A.B.C.
Do the following exercises in order to revise what was taught in those lessons.
Transform the following into sentences conveying the same idea in which **ke- + root + -an** derivatives are used. Then translate the sentences into English. Regard the words in bold as a guide.

Model: i. Gula kita **sudah habis.**
Kita **kehabisan** gula.
We're out of sugar.

ii. Kami **merasa dingin** tadi malam, karena tidak diberi selimut.
Kami **kedinginan** tadi malam, karena tidak diberi selimut.
We were freezing last night, because we weren't given blankets.

a. Bukalah jendela itu, karena teman-temanmu **merasa panas.**
b. Tadi pagi saya **terlambat bangun**, sehingga saya tak ada waktu untuk sarapan.
c. Ibu sering **didatangi** tamu, sebab itu beliau selalu menyediakan kue untuk disajikan dengan teh atau kopi.
d. Kami basah-kuyup, karena **kena hujan** di jalan.
e. Hasan sudah dewasa, tetapi masih **seperti anak-anak.**
f. Dia **takut sekali,** ketika melihat harimau itu mendekatinya.
g. Kapan tas ibumu **hilang**? Ayahmu sudah diberitahukah?
h. Bunyi apa yang **terdengar** olehmu?
i. Rambutmu **agak panjang**. Pergilah ke pangkas besok!
j. Suami **seperti orang Barat** lagaknya sesudah kembali dari Australia. Lamakah dia di sana?

XIV.F. -wan or **-wati** and **-man derivatives**
These suffixes may be affixed to **certain nouns indicating things** to derive from them **nouns denoting persons.** The **-wan/-wati** derivative is the more common.and is currently very productive.
These new nouns often indicate **a person practising a profession** or **characterised by a quality** associated with **the root.**
Nouns with the suffix **-wan** and **-man** are **masculine**, although they may include the **feminine; -wati** derivatives are always feminine; some of these derivatives have no corresponding feminine forms.

1. The following are **nouns** indicating things to which **-wan** is regularly affixed. Note the **formation** of the following nouns and note the **meanings**.

a.	**warta**: news	**wartawan**: journalist	**wartawati**: lady journalist
b.	**negara**: state	**negarawan**: statesman	**negarawati**: stateswoman
c.	**sastra:** literature	**sastrawan**: man of letters	**sastrawati**: woman of letters
d.	**karya**: work	**karyawan:** employee	**karyawati**: lady employee
e.	**juta**: million	**jutawan:** millionaire	
f.	**harta:** property	**hartawan**: wealthy person	
g.	**derma**: alms	**dermawan**: charitable, philantrophic (person)	

h. **usaha**: effort — **usahawan**: employer, industralist
i. **pustaka**: books — **pustakawan:** librarian
j **angkasa**: the sky, firmament — **angkasawan**: spaceman

2. The following are **nouns** indicating things to which **-man is** regularly **affixed.** Note the **formation** of the following **nouns** and note the **meanings.**

a. **seni:** art — **seniman**: artist — **seniwati**: lady artist
b. **budi:** virtue — **budiman**: virtuous (of a person), wise, prudent

XIV.F.1.&.2. Exercises

Translation and fluency drill: translate the following sentences into English. Then master them.

a. Sebutkanlah dua orang **negarawan** di negeri Anda, yang terkenal dan yang masih hidup?
b. Pak Kasim seorang **bangsawan** (aristocrat) lagi **hartawan**, tetapi bukan main kikirnya.
c. Pak Karto adalah seorang **usahawan** yang **budiman** yang mementingkan kesejahteraan **karyawan-karyawan** dalam perusahaannya.
d. Yayasan itu beroleh uang jutaan rupiah dari seseorang yang **dermawan** yang tidak mau disebut namanya.
e. Di Kongres Kebudayaan Nasional baru-baru ini saya lihat banyak hadir **wartawan**, **sastrawan** dan **seniman** yang ternama dari daerah dan ibu kota.

XIV.G. Penggunaan bahasa (Language Usage)

The distribution of the conjunctions **sambil, seraya, waktu, sementara, walaupun** and **sedangkan.** Note that although these words **may usually be rendered** as **while** in English, the **converse is not** the case. Observe carefully **the conjunctions used** in the following Indonesian sentences and **their equivalents** in the corresponding English renderings.

1. Mereka berbicara-bicara **sambil/seraya** merokok dan minum bir. — 1. They chatted **while** smoking and drinking beer.
2. Dia menyeterika **sambil/ seraya** menonton televisi. — 2. She ironed (did the ironing) **while** watching television.
3. Dia tersenyum **seraya/sambil** berkata, 'Bukankah kita sudah pernah bertemu dulu? Di mana, ya?' — 3. He smiled **while** saying, 'Haven't we met before? Where could it have been?'

4. 'Ceraikan aku! Aku tidak mau diperbudak lagi,' seru istrinya **seraya/sambil** menghempaskan pintu kamarnya. — 4. 'Divorce me! I don't want to be treated as a slave any more,' screamed his wife **while** slamming the door of her room.

Note: **Sambil** or **seraya** meaning **while** is used when the same subject performs two actions simultaneously. **Sambil** is more commonly used.

5. **Waktu (and not** sambil) saya menunggu bis, saya melihat kecelakaan itu. — 5. **While** I was waiting for the bus I saw the accident.

Note: The two actions don't proceed together. They coincide at a particular point. In sentence 5) the second action 'melihat' is **an unexpected event** which **intrudes itself** into the **consciousness**, and is thus classified as occurring at a **particular time**, not as a **continuing process**. Note also number 6).

6. Nyonya Harun mengetahui anaknya Katamsi mengisap ganja, **waktu** membersihkan kamarnya. Bukan main terkejutnya dia! — 6. Mrs Harun learned that her son Katamsi smoked hashish **while** cleaning his room. How shocked she was!
7. **Sementara/sambil** menantikan tamu datang, saya memanaskan makanan dan membereskan dapur. — 7. **While** waiting for the guests to come/arrive, I heated up the food and tidied the kitchen.
8 Minah mengasuh anak-anak, **sementara** saya pergi berbelanja. — 8. Minah looked after the children **while** I went to do the shopping.
9. **Walaupun** saya akui bahwa kita menghadapi masalah yang sangat sulit, saya tidak yakin bahwa masalah itu tidak dapat diselesaikan. — 9. **While** I admit that we are facing a very difficult problem I don't believe that it cannot be solved.
10. Bagaimana saya dapat meminjami kamu uang **sedangkan** saya sendiri kekurangan uang? — 10. How can I lend you money **while (whereas)** I am short myself?

XIV.A. English Version

ANGRY

He had forgotten to bring the text of the speech, prepared for him by his personal assistants. He did not even remember the title. He himself was like a piece of blank paper as he faced the meeting. The microphone was already in front of him, and he still did not know what to say.

The audience appeared very serious. They had come from outlying districts. Their country faces showed friendliness, attentiveness and also admiration. At the very least they expected to gain something about which they had never known before. An idea. A fresh explanation, complete with facts. An incisive analysis. And after that of course a sound conclusion, mature, broad and full of hope.

He felt that it would be difficult indeed to fulfil the hopes of these people without the text prepared by his assistants. He had become accustomed to just reading the text out. Simply saying the words without organising what he should actually be saying. He realised right then, that he was just a mouth-piece for the out-pourings of the labours of his expert assistants. So there was no other way. He took the easiest way out. Psychologically he had to provide some kind of diversion for those people. So he became angry.

For two hours he was angry.

He did not know where he found the strength to pour it all out. In no time at all his speech became aggressive. He attacked everything which came into his mind, which could conceivably be attacked. He could not consciously choose the words he used. With tension, heat, ferocity and spirit he seemed to lash everyone in the room. He crushed and trampled on them with cutting criticism.

The audience, who were at first boggle-eyed on seeing his behaviour, lowered their gaze. Nearly all of them sat in their chairs shrinking like an ice-block that was slowly melting. The whole hall was hushed. How hushed! No one dared to stir, nor even to move his feet. No doubt, half of them had pins and needles, back-ache or were feeling dizzy by the time his anger had run its course.

No one dared to applaud when that anger ceased. But nearly all of them stood up as one man, they were at the peak of emotional tension. And when he walked from the podium moving through the middle of the audience to go out, he felt like a knife cutting through stale bread. Nobody smiled at him. Nobody even dared to look at him.

In the car he tried to recall what he had said. But it was like a week-old dream. He had forgotten, it was just vague. He had been so quick, so full of enthusiasm, so fluent. He couldn't remember anything else. Meanwhile he felt empty. In contrast with the way he felt before. He felt relaxed, hungry. He wanted a woman very much.

The first thing he did when he reached home was to look for the text of the speech written by his personal assistants. It was laid neatly on his desk. God alone knew how he had forgotten to take it. Quickly he leafed through

the pages. Apparently no less than three of his assistants had put their best efforts into preparing the text.

He put on his spectacles and began to read. It was really a detailed report. The words were well chosen, politically adroit. It sounded intelligent, competent and comprehensive. It was also deep and could at any time be understood in numerous ways. It would focus on a certain issue, but never fall into a precise formulation, so that at every point it could be taken differently. A blend of literary expertise and mastery of facts.

However, after reading for only a quarter of an hour, drowsiness overcame him. He fell asleep in his chair. He didn't wake till late afternoon. His wife had returned home. There was coffee on the table. There was also an afternoon newspaper. His wife gave him a smile, very sweetly. He didn't know whether it meant a present for his coming birthday or that a request, for which she was preparing him, would follow.

When he had read the afternoon paper, everything became clear. 'Never before has there been such a frank speech, such a sharp analysis, such responsible courage combined with a spirit of optimism such as this. The two-hour speech, which was delivered quite spontaneously without any text, indeed brought us a new perspective, giving us hope while leaving us an image of himself quite different from his usual personality. There can no longer be any doubt that the younger generation will welcome him with enthusiasm. From an individual such as this can certainly be expected clear concrete actions, not only realistic but also appropriate,' ran the newspaper report.

The official reflected on this.

Perhaps it would be an exaggeration to say that from then on he changed a great deal. It is clear however, that whenever he has an opportunity to speak, when he has to face the public, he no longer seeks people to compile his facts for him. He goes straight to the rostrum and speaks quite spontaneously about anything which comes into his head. And certainly he gets angry, angry as angry as can be.

That is why he is popular.

BAB KELIMA BELAS

(Chapter XV)

Ulangan (Revision)

XV.A. Comprehension & Grammar

Read the following passage carefully, then answer the questions given. No English version is provided for this passage since it is intended to test comprehension.

KEMAJUAN?

PADANG — Barangkali tidak banyak lagi kota di negeri ini yang memiliki 'kereta ditarik kuda'. Di Yogya namanya 'andong', di Medan disebut 'sado', di Jakarta dipanggil 'delman' dan di Padang dibilang 'bendi'.

Di kota-kota Sumatera Barat, misalnya: di Padang, Bukit Tinggi, Payakumbuh, bendi masih banyak digunakan untuk mengangkut penumpang, meskipun **daerah jelajah**nya[1] makin mengecil. Hampir sama nasibnya dengan becak di Jakarta, dilarang beroperasi di jalan-jalan tertentu.

Di Padang jumlah bendi makin berkurang. Orang lebih suka naik bemo[2] atau oplet karena lebih cepat sampai di tempat yang dituju. Yang sering menggunakan bendi adalah kelompok keluarga yang berjumlah banyak — tiga atau empat orang naik bendi lebih murah, sebab sewa bendi menurut jauhnya jarak perjalanan dan tidak menurut banyaknya penumpang. Tapi kalau sendirian, ongkos bendi lebih mahal dari naik bemo atau oplet.

"Makanan kuda mahal. Rumput susah didapat, sagu didatangkan dari luar kota," kata seorang **kusir**[3] bendi menjelaskan, mengapa ongkos bendi begitu mahal.

"Berapa lama lagi menurut Bapak, bendi ini boleh dijalankan dalam kota Padang?" tanya saya.

"Entahlah! Sekarang saja sudah banyak jalan yang terlarang buat bendi. Nampaknya semakin **maju**[4] negeri ini, semakin malang nasib kusir bendi!"

"Kalau pada suatu hari bendi dilarang, bagaimana dengan **pencaharian**[5] Bapak?"

"Terpaksa pindah ke desa bekerja pada hari pasar saja. Dulu kuda dan bendi ini saya bawa dari Pekan Baru, karena bendi dilarang di kota itu."

"Di desa tentu susah cari muatan, Pak."

"Terang susah. Tapi dari pada menganggur di kota, lebih baik pulang ke desa. Dapat uang untuk pembeli beras, sudah **lumayan.**[6] Menganggur di kota besar lebih celaka lagi."

Ketika saya **anjurkan**[7] supaya belajar mengemudikan mobil, si kusir bendi yang sudah tua itu menjelaskan, bahwa susah baginya mendapat bemo atau oplet yang akan **ditambangkan.**[8]

"Mana saya sanggup membeli bemo atau oplet? Ke mana dicari uang sebanyak itu? Saya tidak bisa meminjam uang. Siapa yang mau meminjami saya uang? Saya sudah tua lagi miskin. Kalau orang kaya memang gampang dapat kredit, sampai jutaan rupiah."

"Memang susah kalau begitu," kata saya mengeluh.

"Susah, Pak, tambah maju negeri kita tambah banyak pengangguran, kuda pun jadi penganggur di kota," kata kusir itu tertawa.

Saya turut tertawa. Tepat betul ucapan itu, bukan manusia saja yang banyak menganggur di kota, kuda juga bakal jadi **tunakarya.**[9]

"Memang baik pulang ke desa saja. Pembangunan sekarang tertuju ke desa," kata saya menghiburnya.

"Dan jika bendi yang ditarik kuda lenyap dari Minangkabau, saya akan berbuat apa? Saya hanya tahu menjadi kusir bendi. Saya termasuk korban apa yang disebut 'kemajuan'."

Memang kita kagum melihat kemajuan yang telah dicapai oleh manusia. Dengan segala **tehnik**[10] yang **serba**[11] hebat, dunia kita tidak menjadi lebih baik, kalau kemajuan mengakibatkan penderitaan orang banyak. Adalah tugas dan kewajiban kita semua, supaya manusia yang lemah juga mendapat **bagian**[12] untuk menikmati hasil kemajuan.

Kita tidak hidup untuk tehnik, melainkan tehnik dan kemajuan kita kembangkan demi kesejahteraan sesama manusia.

Taslim (saduran)
dikutip dari 'Sinar Harapan'
Sabtu, 22 September 1979.

XV.B. Wordlist

1. derah jelajahnya: the area covered/served
2. bemo: motorised pedicab
3. kusir: driver (of a horse carriage)
4. maju: to go forward, advance
5. pencaharian: livelihood
6. lumayan: sufficient
7. menganjurkan: to suggest.
8. menambangkan: to run or drive a vehicle for hire
9. tunakarya: without a job
10. tehnik: technology
11. serba: all, all sorts of
12. bagian: share, part

XV.C. Comprehension

After studying the text 'Kemajuan', answer the following questions in Indonesian using full sentences.

a. Artikel ini mengenai siapa, kota apa serta daerah mana?

b. Sebutkanlah macam kendaraan yang dipakai di kota Padang sebagai pengangkutan.

c. 'Kereta ditarik kuda' ini didapat tidak hanya di Sumatera Barat, juga di daerah lain di Indonesia. Sebutkanlah kotanya dan nama kereta itu di-masing-masing tempat.

d. Kenapa bemo dan oplet lebih populer sebagai pengangkutan daripada ben-di?

e. Apakah alasan yang dikemukakan Pak Kusir itu, mengapa sewa bendi tidak bisa lebih murah?

f. Dari pembicaraan Pak Kusir dengan pewawancara, besar kemungkinan bahwa pemakaian bendi bakal dilarang di kota Padang. Dari kalimat-kalimat mana Anda tahu?

g. Kalau penambangan bendi dilarang nanti di kota Padang, apakah yang akan diperbuat Pak Kusir?

h. Apakah mudah bagi seorang kusir bendi untuk menjadi sopir oplet atau pengemudi bemo? Apa pendapat Pak Kusir mengenai hal ini?

i. Apakah yang dikatakan pewawancara untuk menyenangkan hati Pak Kusir?

j. Bagi Pak Kusir 'kemajuan' adalah suatu yang tidak menguntungkan. Terangkanlah!

XV.D. Comprehension and Sentence Construction Exercise

Read the following extracts carefully. Form one or two questions in relation to each of them, then answer the questions. Construct your own sentences, do not simply adapt those in the text.

1. Pada suatu kali saya naik kapal terbang keluar negeri. Di depan saya duduk dua orang asing, kulit putih, sedang berbincang-bincang dengan asyik tentang keadaan di Indonesia. Yang seorang mengatakan, bahwa dia meninggalkan Indonesia untuk sementara, karena sudah bosan terlalu lama tinggal di hotel, menunggu-nunggu segala surat izin dan persetujuan untuk penanaman modalnya.
   Question:

   Answer:

2. Bagiku manusia tidak hanya binatang yang bisa ketawa, tetapi adalah binatang yang paling pandai sekaligus pandir, paling cantik sekaligus

banyak cacat. Binatang yang paling sukar untuk dimengerti, tetapi menarik untuk diamati. Suatu tontonan yang menarik, mencengkam dan menggairahkan. Hal-hal inilah yang menyentuh hatiku yang peka. Aku ingin menuliskan mengenai binatang yang paling aneh ini.
Question: ______________________________

____

____

Answer: ______________________________

____

____

3. Memang Raumanen sendiri menganggap dirinya 'orang Manado', sekalipun Minahasa ditinggalkannya sejak masih bayi. Ia besar di kota Jakarta, di mana tiap hari orang-orang dari berbagai pelosok Indonesia bertemu: orang Manado, orang Jawa, orang Padang, orang Sumba, orang Dayak, orang Cina, orang Batak, orang Toraja. Bertemu, bekerja sama, tetapi jarang bergaul.
Question: ______________________________

____

____

Answer: ______________________________

____

____

4. Dari arah kebun terdengar ayam berkokok. Kelindungan oleh daun-daunan nampak sebuah pondok beratapkan lalang. Dia membelok ke arah kebun itu, meniti batang karet yang melintang di atas sebuah bendar di tepi jalan raya. Dari titian ada jalan setapak yang lurus ke arah pondok. Jalan itu dirimbuni pohon pepaya, pisang dan tebu, bayangannya terangguk-angguk, seperti memberi salam kepada dia. Dia singgah di kebun itu, karena dia mau membeli sebatang tebu.
Question: ______________________________

____

____

Answer: ______________________________

____

____

5. Pertama-tama yang dilakukannya setelah sampai di rumah adalah mencari kertas ceramahnya. Ia mengambil kacamata, lalu mulai membaca. Benar-benar sebuah laporan yang teliti. Kata-katanya terpilih. Sangat taktis. Kedengarannya cerdas, tangkas dan luas. Juga dalam dan setiap saat bisa

diartikan ganda. Sebuah perpaduan antara keahlian sastra dan penguasaan data.
Question: ____
____
____
Answer: ____
____
____

XV.E. Provide the correct form of the word in brackets in the following sentences. Then translate the Indonesian sentences into English.

a. Mata polisi (tuju) pada sebilah parang dekat rumpun tebu, di belakang rumah si korban (victim). Mungkin itulah yang dipakai pembunuh itu sebagai senjata.
Correct word form: ______________________________
Translation: ______________________________________
____
____
____

b. 'Kenapa kalian tak (henti) bertengkar dari tadi? Diamlah dan kerjakanlah pekerjaan rumah untuk besok,' kata Nyonya Hamid kepada anak-anaknya marah.
Correct word form: ______________________________
Translation: ______________________________________
____
____
____

c. 'Din, tolong ambilkan aku beberapa helai daun pisang dari kebun (bungkus) makanan ini,' kata Nenek kepada Udin.
Correct word form: ______________________________
Translation: ______________________________________
____
____

d. Rupanya jalan-jalan dari Jakarta ke Bogor sudah (baik) dan (luas). Dulu jalan-jalan itu banyak lubang dan amat sempit.
Correct word form: 1. ______________ 2. ______________
Translation: ______________________________________

____

____

e. Lihatlah orang tua yang (selimut) kain sarung itu! Dia kedinginan kelihatan.
Correct word form: ______________________
Translation: ______________________
____
____

XV.F. After studying the **meaning** of the **nouns**: **root + -an, ke- + root + -an, pe(r-) + root + -an, pember- + root + -an,** complete the following sentences by filling in the blanks or adding the necessary words. Use your imagination! Then translate the sentences into English.

1. **Kukusan** adalah alat dapur yang hampir tiap hari saya gunakan, karena alat itu saya pakai untuk ______________ nasi, ikan, sayur dll.
   Translation: ______________________
   ____
   ____

2. Mahasiswa itu agak bingung, karena dia sudah lama tidak dapat surat atau **kiriman** uang dari ______________.
   Translation: ______________________
   ____
   ____

3. Dia tidak tahu siapa yang ______________ surat itu kepadanya, karena tidak ada tanda tangan atau alamat si **pengirim**.
   Translation: ______________________
   ____
   ____

4. Dia tidak ada uang **pembayar** sewa ______________. Jadi, dia terpaksa tinggal dengan orang tuanya.
   Translation: ______________________
   ____
   ____

5. Untuk mengurangi ______________, **pembuatan** bagian-bagian mobil itu dikerjakan oleh robot.

Translation: ____

____

____

6. 'Kamu tahu **perbuatan**mu itu akan dicela oleh ______________,' kata ayahnya.
   Translation: ____

   ____

   ____

7. Bagaimana kalau kita ______________ di **perhentian** bis saja? Dan dari sana kita bersama-sama pergi ke bioskop.
   Translation: ____

   ____

   ____

8. Saya memang ______________ mendengar berita tentang **pemberhentian** guru saya itu. Dia guru yang sangat baik.
   Translation: ____

   ____

   ____

9. Ribuan orang yang ______________ bencana alam itu bersyukur dan berdoa kepada Tuhannya menurut **kepercayaan** masing-masing, karena mereka selamat.
   Translation: ____

   ____

   ____

10. Yang berbuat demikian adalah orang-orang yang ______________, yang tidak kenal sifat **kemanusiaan.**
    Translation: ____

    ____

    ____

XV.G. Translate the following sentences into Bahasa Indonesia.

1. Father forbade them to smoke, but they smoked all the same.
   Translation: ____

   ____

   ____

2. Mr. Suparman is going to marry off his daughter to someone she has never met.
   Translation: ____
   ____
   ____

3. Didn't he want to admit that he had done wrong? I don't understand it!
   Translation: ____
   ____
   ____

4. What did you say? What should marriage be based on?' asked Minah.
   Translation: ____
   ____
   ____

5. 'He didn't steal the bike. He bought it with borrowed money,' said Dogol's sister. 'He borrowed the money from me.'
   Translation: ____
   ____
   ____
   ____

XV.H. From the list accompanying the following group of sentences, select the appropriate word for each sentence, then translate the sentences into English.
sementara, selagi/selama, sambil, sedangkan.

1. 'Kepala Amin luka dan dalam lukanya. Ambillah secarik kain yang bersih dan obat, ______________ saya membersihkan lukanya,' kata Ibu kepada Ayah.
   Translation: ____
   ____
   ____

2. Kasihan, Minah! Dia menceritakan semua pengalamannya yang pahit itu ______________ menangis tersedu-sedu.
   Translation: ____
   ____
   ____

3. Si suami bekerja keras di dapur, ______________ si istri berbaring-baring di tepi kolam-renang di belakang rumah.
Translation: ____

____

____

4. ______________ saya ada tenaga dan sehat, saya akan terus bekerja,' kata perempuan tua itu.
Translation: ____

____

____

5. ______________ dia menganggur, dia dapat makan hanya satu kali sehari.
Translation: ____

____

____

XV.I. Using an appropriate **-man or -wan** derivative, complete each of the following sentences.

1. Orang yang suka memberi derma disebut orang yang ____________.
2. Orang yang banyak harta disebut ____________.
3. Orang yang mempunyai uang sejuta dolar atau lebih dinamakan ______________.
4. Pengarang, pelukis dan pemahat boleh juga disebutkan ____________.
5. Orang yang ____________ ialah orang yang berbudi halus dan bijaksana.

XV.J. Read the following sentences carefully, complete the compound words in each of them by filling in the blanks as appropriate.

1. Yayasan itu memberi orang tua miskin, yang berbaju **compang-**______________ itu pakaian dan makanan.
2. Gedung itu **penuh-**______________oleh orang yang berdatangan dari luar daerah untuk menghadiri rapat raksasa itu.
3. Suara orang yang meneriakkan jualannya di pasar ikan dekat pertokoan itu, **hiruk-**______________ mulai dari pagi sampai sore.
4. 'Marni akan dikawinkan oleh orang tuanya dengan seorang usahawan yang **kaya-**______________, tetapi sudah lanjut usianya,' kata tetangganya.

5. Waktu saya tiba di rumah tadi malam, rumah **gelap-**________________, sunyi-senyap, kosong. Rupanya ibu saya mendadak sakit dan harus digotong ke rumah sakit.

XV.K. Read the following sentences carefully. Then give a synonym for each of the words in bold.

1. Rapat itu diadakan dengan **mendadak**, karena salah seorang dari anggota staf tewas dalam kecelakaan mobil.
   synonym:________________
2. Tanah di daerah itu **gersang**, tanaman apa pun tak dapat tumbuh.
   synonym:________________
3. 'Barangkali kita harus coba mengerti, **mengampuni** orang tua-tua, angkatan lama yang masih kolot itu, karena terlalu banyak perubahan yang dialami mereka dalam hidup mereka,' kata Manen.
   synonym:________________
4. 'Manusia adalah makhluk yang paling menarik untuk **diamati**, karena manusia adalah sumber warta yang mengasyikkan untuk dikisahkan,' kata wartawan itu.
   synonym:________________
5. 'Kalau pada suatu hari bendi dilarang beroperasi di kota ini bagaimana dengan **pencaharian** Bapak?' tanyanya.
   synonym:________________

BAB KEENAM BELAS

(Chapter XVI)

You have now studied the greater part of the grammatical features of Indonesia and acquired an extensive vocabulary. Thus you have sufficient foundation to make progress on your own. Yet genuine progress depends on experience, and it is only from experience that you will develop a feeling for the nuances of the different cultural traditions which co-exist in Indonesia.

The following stories are intended to give you glimpses of just two of Indonesia's numerous cultural traditions. They are very different from each other and from the Australian cultural tradition.

The first, 'Inem', is by Pramoedya Ananta Toer, one of the best known of Indonesian writers. He is a Javanese born in 1925 in Blora a north coast town of Central Java. He was a war correspondent, and was arrested in 1947 by the Dutch and imprisoned until the transfer of sovereignty at the end of 1949. After about 1957 he became associated with various literary associations linked to the Indonesian Communist Party, and in the aftermath of the attempted coup in 1965 was arrested, and exiled to the island of Buru. He was released in December 1979 and returned to Jakarta.

The story 'Inem' was written in about 1950 but is set in the 1930s, during the Dutch Colonial period.

Child marriages, such as that of Inem, occur rarely, if at all, nowadays. Arranged marriages, however, are still common even among social groups which to an inexperienced observer might appear westernised. In Muslim societies it is the solemn duty of parents to ensure that a daughter is married. Moreover, marriage establishes a relationship between two extended families not simply two individuals; so tactful negotiations and careful planning are involved. However, if after all this, the marriage fails and ends in divorce, the parents have at least done their duty.

From a literary point of view, the main theme of the story is hypocrisy; and the kind of social hypocrisy that it exposes may be found in any culture at any time.

For all the sympathy that Muk's mother professes for Inem she does nothing to help her and values propriety and the good name of her household too much to give shelter to a helpless nine-year-old divorcee.

To appreciate the story, it is necessary to be alert to the cultural signals that contribute to its meaning. Some of these are obvious to a non Indonesian reader — for example the presence of a widow in a household where there are unmarried young men being harmful to the good name of that household. It is not so obvious though that there is a distinction of social class expressed in the dialogue between the narrator of the story and the little girl Inem. She is older than he is but addresses him not by his name, **Muk**, but by the title **Gus**, an abbreviation for the Central Javanese title **Bagus**, because she is only a servant in his household.

It will be noticed that Inem refers to herself by her name instead of a first person pronoun. This is a sign of modesty before her elders and superiors and intimacy to her family and friends. The avoidance of a second person pronoun is also very common, the speaker preferring to address a person by his given name when among equals.

The second story, 'Darah Timor', is of a different character. The author, Gerson Poyk, was born in Rote, a small island in east Indonesia on 16 June 1931. He worked as a teacher and then as a reporter for **Sinar Harapan**, (a Jakarta daily) up to 1970. He is now a free-lance journalist. The collection of short stories in which 'Darah Timor' was published appeared in 1975.

His story is significant because it illustrates the use of Bahasa Indonesia as a literary medium by an author born outside the two major islands of Sumatra and Java. But more important, it reflects a quite different cultural atmosphere.

The majority of the ethnic groups in Indonesia are Muslim. Among the exceptions, however, are Rote and Timor, and so this story is set in a Christian community. It was written about twenty-five years after 'Inem', and makes use of different techniques. It is complex, and reveals several levels of meaning.

It is about the total dedication of a young man Alo to the priest he has served faithfully for several years; the priest betrays this faithful trust and service by accusing Alo of stealing a pair of lost shoes. Alo redeems his self-respect by killing the priest with his machete.

At one level the story is about the need and the right of every individual for self-respect. This right is seen as part of the tradition of the region, and lives in the sun, the soil, the wind and the mountains of Timor.

The author, in developing the symbolism of his story, shows the reaction of a man whose personal dignity has been insulted. The only way he can recover his self-respect is to kill the person who has insulted him. 'The wind makes him do it!' The priest destroyed Alo's self-respect, and has to suffer the consequences.

At another level, the story expresses the superiority of the world of nature and of living human values to the narrow pedantic logic by means of which the priest justifies his accusation of theft.

It will be realised that the cultural meaning of each of these stories is very different, and that each makes its point by the use of situations taken from the author's own cultural background. An understanding of these cultural meanings can only come from experience and wide reading, and the development of a sensitivity to a literature in a different cultural tradition.

This book has taken you yet another stage — both linguistically and culturally — towards the goal of sharing another people's experience. The extracts and stories in it show you how much of the distance you have travelled, and by reading them you are the better equipped to follow further the road to a deeper understanding of what the jargon calls 'an unrelated culture.'

XVI.A. Reading and Comprehension

Read the following story carefully, bearing in mind the points mentioned in the introduction. Study it paragraph by paragraph paying special attention to the sentence structure. If you come to phrases that you cannot understand at all refer to the English rendering and try to work back from it.

INEM

INEM ADALAH KAWANKU DI ANTARA KAWAN-kawan perempuan yang lain. Ia berumur delapan tahun — jadi, dua tahun lebih tua daripada diriku sendiri. Ia tak berbeda dengan mereka. Dan kalau perbedaan itu ada ialah ini: ia tergolong cantik buat gadis-gadis kecil di kampung kami. Senang orang melihatnya. Ia sopan, tak manja, cekatan dan rajin. Sifat-sifat yang segera saja memashurkan namanya sampai di kampung sebelah-menyebelah: Inem patut benar jadi menantuku.

Dan pada suatu kali sedang ia memasak air di dapur, berkata padaku: 'Gus Muk, aku akan dikawinkan.'

'Masa?' kataku.

'Ya. Seminggu yang lalu sudah datang lamarannya. Emak dan Bapak dan kerabat-kerabat lainnya sudah menerima baik lamaran itu.'

'Alangkah senang jadi pengantin!' seruku riang.

'Alangkah senang. Tentu saja! Nanti aku dibelikan pakaian bagus-bagus. Nanti aku didandani pakaian pengantin, dibungai, dibedaki, disipati dan dicelaki. Alangkah senang! Alangkah senang!'

Dan betullah. Pada suatu sore, datanglah emaknya menemui Ibu. Waktu itu Inem dititipkan pada orang tuaku. Pekerjaannya tiap hari ialah membantu memasak di dapur dan menemani aku dan adik-adikku bermain-main.

Penghasilan emak si Inem ialah dari upah yang diterimanya dari membatik. Perempuan-perempuan di kampung kami, apabila tak bekerja di sawah, membatiklah pekerjaannya. Ada yang membatik kain dan ada pula yang membatik ikat kepala. Mereka yang miskin membatik ikat kepala, karena ikat kepala itu lekas dapat diselesaikan dan lekas pula orang mendapat upah. Dan penghasilan emak si Inem ialah dari membatik ikat kepala itu. Mori dan lilin diterimanya dari Toko Ijo, majikannya. Tiap dua lembar yang sudah dibatikinya, ia menerima upah satu setengah sen. Tiap hari rata-rata orang dapat menghasilkan delapan sampai sebelas lembar ikat kepala.

Bapak si Inem adalah seorang pengadu jago. Tiap-tiap hari kerjanya hanya berjudi dengan pertarungan jagonya. Kalau ia kalah, jagonya diambil oleh yang menang. Dan ia pun harus membayar seringgit atau paling sedikit tiga talen. Kalau tidak, ia main kartu dengan tetangga-tetangganya dengan uang pasangan satu sen.

Kadang-kadang bapak Inem tak pulang satu atau setengah bulan, mengembara dengan berjalan kaki. Bila sampai di rumah lagi, artinya ia ada membawa uang.

Waktu emak si Inem menemui Ibu, Inem sedang memasak air di dapur. Aku turut menemui emaknya. Dan tamu itu, Ibu dan aku duduk di bale rendah berwarna merah.

'Ndoro,' kata emak si Inem, 'aku datang untuk meminta si Inem.'

'Mengapa si Inem diminta? Bukankah lebih baik kalau dia ada di sini? Engkau tak perlu mengongkosi dan di sini dia bisa belajar masak.'

'Tapi, Ndoro, habis panen ini aku bermaksud menikahkan dia.'

'Ha?' seru Ibu oleh kaget. 'Dinikahkan?'

'Ya, Ndoro. Dia sudah perawan sekarang, — sudah berumur delapan tahun,' kata emak si Inem.

Sekarang Ibu tertawa. Dan tamu itu heran melihat Ibu tertawa.

'Delapan tahun kan masih kanak-kanak?' tanya Ibu kemudian.

'Kami bukan dari golongan priayi, Ndoro. Aku pikir dia sudah ketuaan setahun. Si Asih itu mengawinkan anaknya dua tahun lebih muda daripada anakku.'

Ibu mencoba menghalangi maksud perempuan itu. Tetapi emak si Inem punya alasan lain. Akhirnya tamu itu berkata lagi: 'Aku sudah merasa beruntung kalau ada orang minta. Kalau sekali ini lamaran itu kami tangguhkan, mungkin tak kan ada lagi yang meminta si Inem. Dan alangkah akan malunya punya anak jadi perawan tua. Dan barangkali saja nanti dia bisa membantu meringankan kebutuhan sehari-hari.'

Ibu tak menyambut. Kemudian ditentangnya aku dan berkata: 'Ambilkan kotak sirih dan paidon.'

Aku pun pergilah mengambil tempat sirih dan tempolong ludah yang terbuat dari kuningan.

'Dan apa kata laki Mbok Inem?'

'0, bapak si Inem setuju saja. Apalagi si Markaban anak orang kaya — anak satu-satunya. Dia sendiri sekarang sudah mulai turut berdagang sapi di Rembang, di Cepu, di Medang, di Pati, di Ngawen, dan juga di Blora sini,' kata Mbok Inem.

Ibu nampak gembira mendengar kabar itu, kegembiraan yang aku tak mengerti mengapa. Kemudian dipanggilnya Inem yang sedang menjerang air di dapur. Inem datang. Dan Ibu bertanya: 'Inem, sudah maukah engkau dikawinkan?'

Inem menundukkan kepala. Ia sangat hormat terhadap Bunda. Tak pernah sekali pun kudengar ia membantah. Memang tidak jarang terdapat pada seseorang, bahwa dia tak punya tenaga untuk membantah apa saja yang dikatakan orang padanya.

Waktu itu kulihat Inem berseri-seri. Sering ia kelihatan seperti itu. Berikan apa saja padanya yang akan menyenangkan hatinya barang sedikit, dan ia akan berseri-seri. Tapi ia tak biasa mengucapkan terima kasih. Dalam pergaulan keluarga-keluarga orang sederhana di kampung kami, kata terima kasih masih asing. Hanya seri yang memancar di paras jua ucapan itu mendapat jalan.

'Ya, Ndoro,' kata Inem pelahan sekali hampir tak terdengar.

Kemudian Mbok Inem dan Ibu makan sirih. Ibu sendiri tak suka sering-sering makan sirih. Ini dikerjakannya bila ada tamu perempuan saja. Dan sebentar-sebentar diludahkan dubangnya ke tempolong kuningan.

'Mbok Inem,' kata Ibu waktu Inem sudah kembali ke dapur. 'Anak-anak kecil tidak boleh dikawinkan.'

Mbok Inem heran mendengar perkataan Ibu itu. Tapi ia tak berkata apa-apa. Juga matanya tak bertanya.

'Aku kawin pada umur delapan belas,' kata Ibu.

Keheranan Mbok Inem hilang. Ia tak heran lagi sekarang. Tapi ia tetap tak berkata apa-apa.

'Mbok Inem, kanak-kanak tak boleh dikawinkan,' Ibu mengulangi.

Dan Mbok Inem heran lagi.

'Nanti anaknya jadi kerdil-kerdil.'

Keheranan Mbok Inem hilang lagi.

'Ya, Ndoro,' kemudian ia berkata dingin, 'emakku kawin pada umur delapan juga.'

Ibu tak perduli dan meneruskan: 'Bukan saja tubuhnya kerdil, juga kesehatannya terganggu.'

'Ya, Ndoro, tapi keluarga kami tergolong keluarga yang berumur panjang. Emak masih hidup sampai sekarang sekalipun umurnya sudah lebih dari lima puluh sembilan tahun. Dan Nenek pun masih hidup. Kukira umurnya ada tujuh puluh empat. Masih gagah dan masih kuat menumbuk jagung.'

Ibu tak juga mau peduli, meneruskan: 'Apalagi kalau lakinya kanak-kanak juga.'

'Ya, Ndoro, tapi Markaban sudah berumur tujuh belas tahun.'

'Tujuh belas tahun! Bapak si Mamuk baru kawin dengan aku waktu dia berumur tiga puluh tahun.'

Mbok Inem berdiam diri. Tak henti-hentinya ia memutar-mutar tembakau yang terselit di antara kedua bibirnya. Sebentar tembakau itu dipindahkan ke kanan, sebentar ke kiri, sebentar lagi digulung-gulungnya untuk penggosok giginya yang hitam arang itu.

Sekarang Ibu tak punya alasan lagi untuk menahan-nahan kehendak tamunya. Bilang: 'Kalau sudah jadi kehendak Mbok Inem untuk mengawinkannya, ya, moga-moga Inem mendapat laki yang baik yang dapat mengurusnya. Dan moga-moga dia mendapat jodohnya.'

Mbok Inem pergi pulang dengan masih juga memutar-mutarkan tembakau dalam mulutnya.

'Moga-moga tak ada kecelakaan menimpa diri anak kecil itu.'

'Mengapa ada kecelakaan menimpanya?' tanyaku.

'Tidak, Muk, tidak apa-apa.' Kemudian Bunda merubah arah percakapan. 'Kalau keadaan keluarga mereka jadi baik, nanti tak kan ada ayam kita yang hilang.'

'Dicurikah ayam-ayam kita, Bu?' tanyaku.

'Tidak, Muk, tidak apa-apa,' Ibu berkata pelahan-lahan. 'Anak begitu kecil. Baru delapan tahun. Kasihan! Tapi mereka butuh uang. Dan jalan satu-satunya hanya mengawinkan anaknya.'

Kemudian Bunda pergi ke ladang di belakang rumah mengambil kacang panjang untuk disayur sebentar lagi.

Lima belas hari sesudah kedatangannya, Mbok Inem datang lagi untuk mengambil anaknya. Senang betul kelihatannya waktu si Inem tak membantah

dibawa. Dan waktu Inem akan meninggalkan rumah kami untuk tak kan jadi anggota keluarga buat selama-lamanya, ia berkata padaku di pintu dapur: 'Sudah, ya, Gus Muk. Inem pulang, Gus Muk,' katanya pelahan sekali.

Ia selalu bicara pelan. Dan kepelanan adalah salah satu dari adat untuk pergaulan kota kecil kami buat menyopankan diri. Ia pergi dengan keriangan kanak-kanak yang akan menerima baju baru.

Mulai saat itu Inem tak lagi diam di rumah kami. Terasa sekali olehku akan kehilangan kawan yang dekat itu. Dan mulai saat itu juga, bukan Inem lagi yang mengantarkan aku ke kamar mandi untuk mencuci kaki di malam hari bila hendak tidur, tapi kakak-angkatku.

Kadang-kadang aku merasai kangen yang amat sangat untuk bertemu dengan Inem. Tak jarang, bila aku telah berbaring di tempat tidur, terkenang padanya waktu tangannya ditarik oleh emaknya. Dan kedua orang itu pergi meninggalkan rumah kami. Rumah Inem ada di belakang rumah kami, hanya dibatasi oleh pagar kayu.

Sebulan lamanya ia telah pergi. Aku sering datang ke rumahnya untuk bermain-main dengannya. Dan Ibu selalu marah bila tahu aku ada di sana.

Katanya selalu: 'Kepandaian apa yang bisa kaudapat dari rumah Inem?'

Dan selalu aku tak menjawab. Ibu selalu dengan alasan bila memarahi aku. Tiap kata-katanya merupakan dinding tebal yang tak bisa dilalui oleh dalih-dalih. Karena itu lebih baik aku berdiam diri. Dan sebagai kunci kemarahannya, hampir dapat dipastikan ia mengulangi kalimat yang sering diucapkannya: 'Buat apa kau bermain-main dengan dia? Bukankah masih banyak anak-anak yang boleh kauajak bermain-main? Dan lagi dia perempuan yang sebentar lagi dikawinkan pula.'

Tetapi aku datang saja ke rumahnya dengan mencuri-curi. Sungguh mengherankan kadang-kadang mengapa larangan itu adanya dan pentingnya hanya untuk dilanggar. Dan dalam pelanggaran itu ada terasa olehku bahwa apa yang kukerjakan itu menikmatkan. Dan untuk kanak-kanak seperti aku pada waktu itu — oh, alangkah banyak larangan dan pantangan yang ditimpakan pada kepala kami. Ya, seakan-akan semua yang ada di dunia ini mengawasi kami, dan tak memperbolehkan sebarang yang kami perbuat dan hendaki. Mau tak mau kami kanak-kanak merasa, sesungguhnya dunia ini hanya diperuntukkan buat orang-orang dewasa.

Kemudian datanglah hari perkawinan itu.

Lima hari sebelum pernikahan dilangsungkan, keluarga si Inem sibuk memasak-masak juadah dan makanan di dapur. Ini membuat aku lebih kerap lagi datang ke rumahnya.

Sehari sebelum pernikahan, Inem dihiasi bagus-bagus. Ibu menyuruh aku datang ke sana mengantarkan lima kilo beras dan uang setalen buat sumbangan. Dan sore harinya kami kanak-kanak datang mengerubunginya dan mengagumi. Anak rambut di kening, alis dan cambang Inem dicukur dan dibentuk baik-baik serta ditebalkan dengan celak. Sanggulnya yang kecil dibesarkan dengan cemara rambut dan dibungai dengan kembang kertas bertangkaikan per yang kami namai **sunduk mentul**. Pakaiannya terbuat dari sutera satin. Kainnya kain mahal buatan Solo. Semua itu disewa dari seorang Tionghoa di petjinan dekat alun-alun. Juga cincin dan gelang yang terbuat dari emas adalah sewaan belaka.

Rumah pun telah diperbagus dengan pajangan daun beringin dan daun kelapa muda. Bendera tiga-warna disilang-silangkan di tiap dinding dalam lingkaran daun palma. Juga tiang-tiang dihiasi dengan pita tiga-warna belaka.

Ibu sendiri datang dan turut membantu menyelenggarakan. Tetapi tidak lama. Hal yang demikian jarang dilakukan oleh Bunda bila tak untuk tetangga yang paling dekat. Belum lagi sejam ia telah pulang lagi. Dan di waktu itu juga datang kiriman dari bakal laki Inem: satu pikul juadah, seekor kambing bandot, satu dacin beras, satu pak garam, satu karung kelapa yang telah dikupas sambuknya dan setengah karung gula pasir.

Waktu itu baru habis panen. Beras murah. Dan bila beras murah segala bahan makanan turut murah. Itulah sebabnya sehabis musim kawin banyak diadakan peralatan. Oleh karena itu pula keluarga Inem tak berhasil memperoleh tanggapan wayang. Dalang-dalang sudah menerima permintaan dari lain-lain keluarga dan kampung.

Karena tak ada dalang lagi, keluarga Inem menanggap joget. Mula-mula terjadi pertengkaran. Famili pihak Mbok Inem terdiri dari barisan orang ulama. Tapi Pak Inem tak dapat dikalahkan. Dan joget pun datanglah dengan gamelannya. Tayuban pun diadakan.

Biasanya tayuban di tempat kami dihadiri oleh orang-orang jang turut menari dan anak-anak kecil yang hanya hendak menonton — anak-anak kecil yang pengetahuannya tentang kejenisan belum lagi melampaui mencium. Anak-anak yang telah dewasa tak suka menonton: malu. Apalagi kaum wanita — tak ada sama sekali. Dan tayuban di tempat kami — untuk memanaskan semangat seksuil — selalu disertai dengan minuman keras: arak, bir, wiski, yenewer atau gin.

Tayuban itu dilakukan dua hari-dua malam. Senang betul kami kanak-kanak melihat orang lelaki dan perempuan menjoget dan bercium-ciuman dan sebentar-sebentar mengadu gelas dan meneguk minuman keras itu sambil menjoget dan berteriak: 'Huse!'

Dan walaupun Ibu, melarang aku datang menonton, tapi aku pergi juga dengan mencuri-curi.

'Mengapa engkau datang juga ke tempat orang-orang durhaka itu? Lihatlah kiaimu, sekalipun dia ipar Pak Inem, tapi dia tak juga datang menonton. Engkau lihat sendiri itu.'

Kiai kami berumah di belakang rumah kami juga, di sebelah kanan rumah Inem. Di kemudian hari tak hadirnya kiai ini jadi buah percakapan yang selalu menghangatkan percakapan. Juga menimbulkan dua hal yang menggatal saja di ujung lidah: Pak kiai memang orang alim dan Pak Inem bangsat.

Ibu menguatkan kemarahannya padaku itu dengan kata-kata yang waktu itu tak dapat kufahami: 'Tahu kau? Mereka itu adalah orang-orang yang tak tahu menghargai wanita,' katanya dengan suara menusuk.

Dan waktu pengantin lelaki datang untuk dipertemukan dengan pengantin perempuan, Inem yang duduk di puadai dituntun orang. Pengantin lelaki sudah sampai di pendopo. Si Inem berjongkok dan menyembah bakal lakinya kemudian mencuci kaki lelaki itu dengan air bunga dari jambang kuningan. Kemudian pengantin itu diikat jadi satu dan dituntun dibawa bersama ke

puadai. Waktu itu juga terdengar hadirin bersama-sama bilang: 'Anak satu jadi dua. Anak satu jadi dua. Anak satu jadi dua.'

Dan perempuan-perempuan yang menonton berseri-seri seakan-akan mereka sendiri yang bakal mendapat kesenangan.

Waktu itu jualah kulihat Inem menangis hingga bedaknya rusak, dan air matanya menjaluri mukanya yang cantik itu. Di rumah aku bertanya pada Ibu: 'Mengapa pengantin tadi menangis, Bu?'

'Kalau pengantin menangis, ialah karena dia ingat pada nenek-moyang jang sudah lama meninggal. Arwah-arwah mereka turut menghadiri upacara itu. Dan lagi mereka bersenang hati keturunannya telah menikah dengan selamat,' jawab Ibu.

Perkataannya itu tak pernah kupikirkan. Di kemudian hari tahu juga aku mengapa dia menangis. Inem mau kencing, tapi tak berani bilang.

Peralatan itu habis dengan dingin saja. Tak ada lagi tamu yang datang menyumbang. Rumah kembali seperti tadi-tadinya. Dan waktu mindring-mindring datang menagih, Pak Inem sudah meninggalkan kota Blora. Mbok Inem dan Inem sendiri sesudah pernikahan itu terus membatik dan membatik — siang dan malam. Dan bila orang datang ke rumah mereka pada jam tiga pagi, tak jarang mereka dapat ditemui masih membatik. Dan asap dapur lilin mengepul-ngepul di antara keduanya. Selain dari itu, sering kali terdengar pertengkaran di rumah itu.

Dan pada suatu kali waktu aku sedang tidur di ranjang dengan Bunda teriakan yang keras membangunkan daku: 'Tak mau! Tak mau!'

Masih malam waktu itu. Dan teriakan itu diulang-ulang dibarengi dengan pukulan pada pintu dan berdembam-dembam. Aku tahu, teriakan itu keluar dari mulut Inem. Aku kenal suaranya.

'Bu, mengapa Inem berteriak, Bu?' aku bertanya pada Bunda.

'Berkelahi. Moga-moga tak ada kecelakaan menimpa diri anak kecil itu,' katanya. Tapi ia tak memberi penerangan apa-apa.

'Mengapa ada kecelakaan menimpanya, Bu?' tanyaku mendesak.

Ibu tak mau memberikan jawabannya. Dan kemudian, bila pekik-raung itu habis, kami tertidur kembali. Dan teriakan seperti itu hampir dapat dipastikan terjadi tiap malam. Teriak, dan teriak. Dan tiap aku mendengarnya aku bertanya pada Bunda. Ibu tak mau menjawab dengan semestinya. Kadang ia hanya mengeluh: 'Kasihan, anak begitu kecil.'

Dan pada suatu hari datanglah si Inem ke rumah kami. Langsung saja ia mencari Bunda. Parasnya pucat tak berdarah. Sebelum berkata apa-apa, ia mengacarai pertemuan itu dengan tangisnya — tangis yang sopan.

'Mengapa menangis, Inem? Engkau berkelahi lagi?' tanya Ibu.

'Ndoro,' kata Inem, 'aku harap,' di antara sedu-sedannya, 'sudi menerima aku di sini seperti dulu.'

'Bukankah engkau sudah berlaki, Inem?'

Dan Inem menangis lagi. Dalam tangisnya itu ia berkata: 'Aku tak tahan, Ndoro.'

'Mengapa, Inem? Tak senangkah engkau pada lakimu?' tanya Bunda.

'Ndoro, kasihanilah aku ini. Tiap malam dia mau menggelut saja kerjanya, Ndoro.'

"Bukankah engkau bisa bilang, 'Kang, jangan begitu'?"

'Inem takut, Ndoro. Inem takut padanya. Dia begitu besar. Dan kalau menggelut kerasnya bukan main hingga Inem tak bisa bernafas, Ndoro. Bukankah Ndoro mau menerima aku lagi?' pintanya terhiba-hiba.

'Kalau engkau tak punya laki, Inem, tentu saja engkau kuterima. Tapi engkau punya laki...,' kata Bunda.

Dan Inem menangis lagi mendengar perkataan Ibu itu.

'Ndoro, Inem tak mau punya laki.'

'Walau engkau tak mau, tapi engkau tetap punya, Inem. Barangkali di kemudian hari lakimu jadi baik, dan engkau berdua bisa hidup senang. Bukankah engkau dulu mau dikawinkan?' kata Ibu.

'Ya, Ndoro — — tapi, tapi — '

'Inem, walau bagaimanapun juga, seorang perempuan harus berbakti pada suaminya. Bila engkau tak berbakti pada lakimu, engkau akan kena sumpah nenek-moyangmu,' kata Ibu.

Tambah keras tangis Inem. Dan oleh tangisnya itu ia tak bisa berkata apa-apa.

'Sekarang, Inem, berjanjilah engkau, engkau akan selalu menyediakan makan untuk lakimu. Kalau engkau menganggur, engkau harus berdoa pada Tuhan agar dia selamat selalu. Engkau harus berjanji akan mencuci pakaiannya, dan engkau harus memijitnya kalau dia capai dari mencari rejeki. Engkau harus mengerikinya kalau dia masuk angin.'

Inem tak juga menjawab. Hanya air matanya terus jatuh.

'Nah, pulanglah engkau, dan mulai saat ini, berbaktilah engkau padanya.

Baik dia buruk, baik dia baik, engkau harus berbakti padanya karena dia itu tak lain daripada lakimu sendiri.'

Inem yang duduk di lantai tak juga bergerak.

'Berdirilah, dan pulanglah pada lakimu. Engkau,—kalau engkau meninggalkan lakimu begitu saja, tak kan baik jadinya dengan dirimu di kemudian hari dan sekarang,' kata Ibu lagi.

'Ya, Ndoro,' katanya patuh.

Pelahan-lahan ia berdiri dan berjalan pulang.

'Kasihan, begitu kecil,' kata Bunda.

'Bu, pernahkah Ibu digelut Ayah?' tanyaku.

Hati-hati Ibu mengamat-amati mataku. Kemudian pengamat-amatannya hilang. Ia tersenyum.

'Tidak,' katanya. 'Ayahmu adalah orang yang paling baik di seluruh dunia, Muk.'

Kemudian Ibu pergi ke dapur mengambil pacul dan mencangkul di ladang bersama daku.

Satu tahun pun berlalulah dengan tiada terasa. Pada suatu kali datang pula si Inem. Satu tahun itu telah membuat dia jauh lebih besar daripada sebelumnya. Nampak betul ia sudah jadi dewasa walaupun baru berumur sembilan. Seperti biasa, langsung dia menemui Ibu, duduk di lantai sambil menundukkan kepala. Berkata: 'Ndoro, sekarang Inem sudah tak punja laki lagi.'

'Apa?'

'Inem sekarang sudah tak berlaki lagi.'

'Engkau sudah janda?' Ibu bertanya.

'Ya, Ndoro.'

'Mengapa engkau bercerai dengannya?'

Ia tak menjawab.

'Engkau tak berbakti padanya?'

'Inem pikir, Inem selalu berbakti padanya, Ndoro.'

'Engkau pijiti dia kalau pulang kelelahan mencari rejeki?' tanya Bunda menyelidiki.

'Ya, Ndoro, semua pesan sudah Inem jalankan.'

'Mengapa bercerai juga?'

'Ndoro, dia sering memukuli Inem.'

Memukuli? Anak begini kecil dipukuli?'

'Inem sudah cukup berbakti, Ndoro. Dan kalau dia memukuli, dan Inem kesakitan, berbakti jugakah itu, Ndoro?' tanyanya betul-betul minta keterangan.

Bunda berdiam diri. Matanya menyelidiki Inem.

'Dipukuli,' bisik Bunda kemudian.

'Ya, Ndoro — dipukuli, seperti Emak dan Bapak memukuli aku.'

'Barangkali engkau memang kurang berbakti padanya. Seorang suami tak kan sampai hati memukuli bininya bila dia sungguh-sungguh berbakti.'

Inem tak menjawab. Dirubahnya arah percakapan:

'Sudikah Ndoro menerima Inem kembali?'

Tak Bunda berbimbang-bimbang dalam menjawabnya. Berkata tegas: 'Inem, engkau sekarang janda. Di sini banyak anak lelaki yang sudah besar-besar. Bukankah tidak baik dipandang mata orang lain?'

'Tapi mereka tak kan memukuli Inem,' kata janda itu.

'Bukan. Bukan itu maksudku. Kalau di tempat yang banyak lelakinya ada seorang janda yang begitu muda seperti engkau, tidak baiklah dipandang mata orang lain.'

'Karena Inemkah itu, Ndoro?'

'Bukan, Inem, karena kesopananlah itu.'

'Kesopanan, Ndoro? Karena kesopanankah Inem tak boleh di sini?'

'Ya, begitulah, Inem.'

Janda itu tak berkata apa-apa lagi. Ia tinggal duduk di lantai. Dan nampaknya, ia tak ada maksud untuk meninggalkan tempat duduknya. Ibu mendekati dan menepuk-nepuk bahunya — menghibur: 'Sekarang, Inem — lebih baik engkau bantu orang tuamu mencari rejeki. Sungguh sayang, aku tak bisa menerima engkau lagi.'

Dua tetes air mata membutir disudut-sudut mata perempuan kecil itu. Ia berdiri. Lesu ia melangkahkan kakinya meninggalkan rumah kami menuju ke rumah orang tuanya. Dan sejak itu ia jarang nampak keluar dari rumah.

Dan kemudian, janda yang berumur sembilan tahun itu — karena hanya membebani rumah tangga orang tuanya — boleh dipukuli oleh siapa saja yang

suka: emaknya, adiknya yang lelaki, pamannya, tetangganya, bibinya. Namun Inem tak pernah datang lagi ke rumah kami.

Sering terdengar teriak-kesakitannya. Bila ia meraung, kututup kupingku dengan kedua belah tangan. Dan Ibu pun tetap memegang kesopanan rumah tangganya.

Oleh Pramoedya Ananta Toer,
dikutip dari 'Cerita dari Blora'
Jakarta, 1952.

XVI.B. Pekerjaan Rumah (Homework)

To check your understanding of the story you have just studied, and to give you practice in the active use of Indonesian, write (in Indonesian) ten comprehension questions on it, and answer them as fully as you can. These questions should be directed to the main points of the story.

XVI.C. Reading and Comprehension

First read the following story right through to gain an overview of its content. Then study it carefully paragraph by paragraph and work out the right word-groupings. If you come to phrases that you cannot understand at all try to work them out on the basis of what you have already learnt. If you still cannot discover the meaning, refer to the English rendering and try to work back from it.

DARAH TIMOR

Lima tahun yang lalu, Aloysius Waiwerang keluar dari penjara Nusakambangan dengan baik, dalam arti banyak orang yang sedih, terutama karyawan penjara, karena mereka kehilangan pemburu celeng yang baik, yang berlari-lari memburu celeng dan langsung membunuhnya dengan tombak. Di samping itu, Alo sangat setia dan ramah kepada siapa saja, terutama kepala penjara dan tuan-tuan pegawai penjara serta keluarga-keluarga mereka.

Ia bermukim di sana selama lima tahun. Kesalahan yang dibuatnya adalah satu: ia membunuh seorang pastor dengan parang yang selalu tergantung di pinggangnya. Ini suatu hal yang biasa buat sementara laki-laki di kampungnya: menyelesaikan suatu pertentangan dengan parang! Oh, mengapa ia membunuh seorang pastor tua yang telah puluhan tahun bermukim di kampungnya?

Di waktu kecilnya, pastor itulah yang memberinya pendidikan agama ketika Alo masih duduk di bangku Sekolah Dasar. Setelah ia menjadi besar, karena sekolahnya hanya sampai di sekolah dasar saja, ia tak dapat memilih pekerjaan lain kecuali bertani kemudian bekerja sambilan pada missi Katolik di kampungnya. Kerja sambilan ini cukup menarik hatinya: ia menjadi tukang pikul ransel Tuan pastor ketika yang terakhir ini mengadakan torne ke

kampung-kampung untuk mengabarkan cinta kasih Kristus kepada sesama manusia.

Dalam ransel itu ada barang-barang yang berhubungan dengan tugas pastor itu: buku-buku agama, pakaian, bekal dan sepasang sepatu serep. Alo tidak punya apa-apa, kecuali sepasang celana hitam yang pendek dan sebuah baju kaos dalam, yang sudah dekat dengan warna tanah di kampungnya, warna hitam kekuning-kuningan. Milik lain adalah selembar kain pelekat tipis yang sudah tua yang selalu terselempang di bahunya. Ia adalah seorang laki-laki muda yang kuat menahan dingin dan panas sambil memikul ransel pastor. Sudah beberapa tahun, pekerjaannya itu dilakukannya dengan penuh kesetiaan pada pastor itu. Kesetiaan Nasraniah kalau boleh dikatakan demikian. Kesetiaan itu terbatas pada suatu hari, di sebuah kampung terpencil yang berpenduduk kurang lebih sepuluh kepala keluarga.

Ketika itu, keduanya baru saja datang dari sebuah kampung yang terletak di sebuah lembah yang makmur dengan ladang-ladang dan sedikit sawah yang bercampur dengan kebun-kebun kopi dan jeruk. Penduduknya berdarah panas alias bertemperamen keras, tetapi penuh dengan iman, harapan dan kasih. Di samping rumah-rumah yang besar yang dibuat dari lalang dan ijuk serta kayu-kayuan yang diambil dari gunung-gunung yang mengitari lembah itu, ada kandang-kandang binatang yang sehat-sehat dan gemuk-gemuk. Di tengah-tengah tempat kediaman manusia dan binatang itu, ada sebuah rumah Tuhan yang beratap seng dengan candinya yang runcing menjulang. Di sekitarnya ada sebuah rumah penginapan milik missi, rumah sekolah dan rumah-rumah guru.

Tuan pastor dan Alo, baru saja datang dari kampung itu. Seminggu lamanya mereka melayani umat di kampung yang terletak di lembah itu, kemudian sesuai dengan rencana torne, Tuan pastor dengan Alo, datang ke kampung yang berpenduduk sepuluh kepala keluarga itu untuk selama satu hari.

Di hari Minggu, Tuan pastor akan memimpin misa, memberi komuni, dan setelah salve di sore hari, keduanya akan berangkat malam-malam menuju sebuah kampung terpencil lainnya yang terletak di balik gunung untuk melakukan pekerjaan yang sama.

Kurang lebih delapan jam lamanya keduanya berjalan dari kampung yang terletak di lembah itu. Keduanya cukup capek mendaki jalan setapak yang berliku-liku mengikis lereng gunung. Tetapi begitu mereka sampai Alo segera menanak nasi, membuatkan Tuan pastor segelas teh. Ini adalah pekerjaan rutin buat Alo.

Tuan pastor juga melakukan pekerjaan rutin: secara mekanis tangannya bergerak kukuh membuka ransel, mengeluarkan buku-buku dan meletakkannya di atas bale-bale lalu memberes-bereskan pakaiannya, handuknya, sikat giginya, sisirnya, sabunnya dan tiba-tiba matanya menukik, keningnya berkerut. Secara mekanis, logikanya berjalan!

Selama di Seminari Tinggi, dan selama menjadi pelayan Kristus, Tuan pastor telah terlatih dengan cara berpikir logis. Di saat tangannya bergerak kukuh dan mekanis membongkar-bongkar ransel, merembetlah tiba-tiba mekanisme tangan ke mata, ke dahi dan ke otak besar dan otak kecilnya dan selanjutnya — dalam waktu yang rahasia — merembes ke jantungnya yang

deras memompa darahnya. Intuisi dan emosinya tidaklah ketinggalan — tetapi apalah semuanya ini? Entahlah apa namanya, tetapi semuanya berkisar pada sepasang sepatu yang hilang!

Dalam keadaan yang demikian, Tuan pastor adalah seorang yang dapat menahan emosi. Dia adalah seorang gembala umat yang baik dan oleh karena itu ia terus memakai cara-cara berpikir sistimatis lebih dahulu, emosi kemudian.

Keduanya sendiri dalam biyak yang terletak di samping kapela. Alo sedang sibuk mempersiapkan makanan ketika Tuan pastor memanggilnya pelan-pelan. Di tengah-tengah keduanya terletak ransel yang menganga. Di samping Alo, terletak isi ransel itu.

'Alo,' kata Tuan pastor dengan lembut.

'Ya, Tuan pastor,' jawab Alo dengan penuh kepatuhan.

'Tuhan memberi kita otak untuk berpikir dan barang siapa yang tidak menerima anugerah ini dan mempergunakannya, dia menyalahi kehendak Tuhan.'

'Ya, benar, Tuan pastor,' kata Alo dengan suara yang rendah menerima segala ucapan pastor.

'Alo, saya sedang mempergunakan pikiran: mengapa sampai sepatu saya tidak ada dalam ransel, pada hal saya ingat betul, sebelum kita berangkat dari lembah, sayalah yang menaruh sepatu itu dalam ransel.'

Alo kaget. Matanya melihat kaki pastor. Sepatu boot tuannya yang berdebu masih membungkus kakinya.

'Tuan pastor,' kata Alo, 'saya hanya mengangkut ransel itu. Seingat saya, saya tidak pernah membuka ransel itu di perjalanan. Ya, seingat saya, saya pernah meletakkannya di atas batu yang bersih yang muncul di tengah sungai yang mengalir di kaki gunung, di mana kita beristirahat dan mandi. Batu itu dikelilingi air. Tidak mungkin ada orang yang mengambilnya. Menurut pikiran yang sehat dan jernih, belut atau udang tidak bisa mencuri sepatu. Sehabis mandi, bukankah Tuan pastor melihat sendiri saya mengangkut ransel itu, bukan?'

Mendengar ucapan Alo, Tuan pastor hanya mengangguk-anggukkan kepala sambil berpikir bahwa apa yang dikatakan Alo, masuk di akal juga: tidak mungkin ada binatang yang telah campur tangan atas kehilangan ini. Kalau begitu, siapa lagi kalau bukan manusia yang mencurinya? Tapi ini suatu kesulitan besar: manusia siapakah yang mencurinya? Ia sadar betul, bahwa semenjak keberangkatan dari lembah hanya mereka keduanya yang berada di kulit bumi. Orang ketiga hanyalah Kristus, tetapi Kristus telah memberikan logika berpikir kepada manusia — — kepada pastor — kemudian adalah kedua manusia itu sendiri menyelesaikan persoalan sepatu.

Ya, semesta penciptaan jadi bisu, betul-betul bisu ketika lambat laun sang pastor jadi dongkol sambil berpikir dan mengingat terus.

Di pihak lain, di pihak Alo terjadi proses yang sama: ia heran dan menyesal, dongkol dan berpikir serta mengingat-ingat. Ia kepingin sekali mengetahui di mana sepatu itu terlontar meninggalkan kedua makhluk Tuhan itu.

Apa mau dikata lagi? Jarak dari kampung di lembah dengan kampung di lereng gunung itu sudah cukup jauh, tetapi dengan mempergunakan ingatan dan pikiran jarak itu menjadi dekat dan akhirnya, Tuan pastorlah yang memperdekat jarak itu dengan sebuah kesimpulan yang masuk akal.

'Alo,' katanya, 'menurut pikiran waras tidak ada belut atau ikan di sungai yang dapat mencuri sepatu itu, bukan?'

'Benar, Tuan pastor,' kata Alo. 'Tetapi Tuan ingat-ingat dulu, barangkali Tuan lupa menaruhnya. Barangkali sepatu itu tertinggal.'

'Saya percaya pada ingatan saya. Walaupun demikian, dapatkah Alo menolong mengingatkan saya dan mengingatkan diri sendiri, apakah ada sesuatu yang tertinggal di sana?'

Alo mengingat-ingat sebentar. 'Seingat saya,' kata Alo kemudian, 'tidak ada sepatu yang tercecer. Sudah sekian tahun saya terlatih untuk tidak melupakan barang-barang Tuan. Ini suatu keanehan bagi saya kalau sepatu itu hilang.'

Pastor itu diam. Di depannya seolah ada sesuatu gerongga yang kosong, yang harus diisi oleh kebenaran dan kebenaran itu tidak usah jauh-jauh dicari karena menurut logika, siapakah lagi yang mencurinya kalau bukan Alo?

'Alo, kaulah yang mencuri sepatu itu,' kata Tuan pastor dengan penuh keberanian mempertahankan kebenaran kesimpulannya. 'Ini menurut akal sehat, tidak ada kemungkinan buat ikan di sungai itu untuk mencuri sepatu.'

Alo terkejut. Jantungnya menderu seperti mesin. Hatinya tersinggung. Siapakah yang dapat menolong dia dari tuduhan yang berdasarkan pikiran yang logis itu? Tiada ikan-ikan yang mencuri. Belut yang panjang pun tidak meraih sepatu. Hanya manusialah yang mencurinya. Ia menyadari betul kebenaran cara berpikir ini, tetapi sekaligus ia menyadari bahwa ia tertangkap ke dalam gerongga hilangnya sepatu Tuan pastor itu. Demi kebenaran yang ia hayati sendiri di muka bumi ini, kebenaran yang kini tidak bisa dihayati oleh pastor — karena pastor telah melancarkan sebuah kebenaran pikiran — ia harus keluar dari dalamnya, ia harus berani.

Tuan pastor telah meninggalkan dia. Tiba-tiba keberanian Alo hilang. Ia makin menjadi sunyi-senyap, bertanya-tanya pada dirinya sendiri: 'Siapakah yang telah mencuri sepatu itu?' Sebagai seorang Nasrani, ia mencoba melihat wajah Kristus dalam imajinasinya, dan sekaligus meminta pertolongan untuk menyelesaikan masalah ini. Tapi nampaknya Kristus hanya tersenyum berkata: 'Kau, anakku Alo, tidak mencuri.' Ah, tiba-tiba harga dirinya kembali. Tuan pastor telah menghina putra Kristus yang bernama Aloysius Waiwerang. Ini tidak bisa ditolerir. Alo tersinggung betul.

'Tetapi celakanya pastor adalah wakil Tuhan di bumi. Mengapa wakil Tuhan tidak melihat kebenaran yang hakiki?'

Ketika pikiran Alo sedang melingkar-lingkar dan terkaing-kaing karena tuduhan mencuri sepatu itu, tiba-tiba ada suara halilintar yang meremuk-redam hatinya: 'Alo,' Tuan pastor bersuara keras. 'Mengakulah, kepada Tuhan dan kepada saya, bahwa sepatu itu kau ambil.'

Amboi. Kesadaran Alo sebagai orang yang menghayati kebenaran tidak mencuri sepatu, menjadi hilang. Ia tercebur dalam mekanisme aliran darah yang makin lama makin panas dan kencang dan darah itu mendesak

padat ke otaknya sehingga tidak bisa berpikir lagi dan darah yang lainnya turun ke urat-urat matanya yang disentak menjadi merah, sehingga hampir tak mampu ia melihat keindahan dunia dari lereng gunung itu. Tetapi ia masih mampu berdiri sendiri sebagai manusia. Hatinya terkaing-kaing, tersinggung karena martabatnya diinjak-injak. Dengan lain kata, ia masih mempunyai kemampuan mempertahankan diri, di samping keterbatasannya.

Ia mampu melihat mata pastor dengan matanya yang merah dengan segala kebenciannya. 'Laki-laki ini,' demikian suara kemampuannya, 'laki-laki ini berpikir bahwa hanya ialah yang berdiri sendiri di muka bumi ini dengan kebenaran yang ada padanya.'

Dalam waktu yang sama Tuan pastor melihat dia dengan mata yang ditopang oleh kesimpulan yang telah dimilikinya sebagai kebenaran. Keduanya berpandang-pandangan seperti ayam yang sedang memulai bersabung.

Alo tak tahan lagi melihat pandangan itu. Hatinya betul-betul tersinggung karena martabat dirinya digiring ke dalam gerongga tuduhan-sepatu-hilang.

Alo meninggalkan pastor itu dan kembali lagi dengan parang dalam sarung yang tergantung di pinggangnya. Oh, ketika ia hendak menunjukkan kemampuannya untuk melenyapkan anggapan yang tak benar dalam mata dan kerongkongan pastor itu ia tertumbuk pada suatu benteng yang bernama hati nurani manusia di mana roh-cinta-kasih-Kristus terukir. Ia sembahyang di depan pastor itu.

Melihat kelakuan yang demikian, Tuan pastor yang baik hati itu, juga bersembahyang kepada Kristus agar Kristus mengampuni kesalahannya mencuri sepatu.

Ketika keduanya membuka mata, astaga, keduanya sendirian di muka bumi ini. Yang satu mempertahankan martabat diri, yang lain mempertahankan kesimpulan yang logis.

Alo, membuat tanda salib, lalu mencium tangan dan kaki pastor.

Seluruh dunia diam membisu, juga Kristus, ketika Alo berkata: 'Aku tidak mencuri sepatu itu, Tuan pastor. Jangan menghina aku!' Kemudian dicabutnya parangnya dengan seluruh mekanisme tangan, jantung dan darahnya, lalu parang itu diarahkan ke kerongkong Tuan pastor, yang pernah berfungsi secara mekanis pembawa suara tuduhan mencuri sepatu.

Harga diri Alo sekejap kembali. Ia berdiri di atas sebuah gunung yang tinggi, sendiri, dalam keagungannya sebagai manusia yang telah membela kebenaran. Di sampingnya ada mayat Tuan pastor yang terbaring sendiri penuh rahasia dan kebodohan karena logika berpikirnya dalam hal hilangnya sepatu. Tangan dan semuanya sudah tidak berfungsi lagi.

Tiba-tiba Alo menjadi makin sunyi, hidup dalam kebenaran dan kengerian. Ia benar tidak mencuri sepatu, tetapi ia ngeri sekali karena telah membunuh manusia yang seperti juga dirinya. Kebenaran dan kengerian menjadi tampang pribadinya.

Dengan dua tampang itu, tampang yang sangat berlawanan itu, ia turun ke lembah di mana ada pos polisi. Sudah kebiasaan untuk orang-orang Timor yang membunuh, menyerahkan dirinya kepada polisi. Ini pun suatu mekanisme yang aneh. Dengarlah percakapan apa yang telah terjadi dengan polisi: 'Kenapa kamu membunuh pastormu sendiri?'

'Karena saya sendiri di lereng gunung itu. Karena angin. Karena matahari. Karena sungai membikin saya capek, karena saya marah dituduh yang tidak-tidak, mencuri sepatu,' kata Alo dalam kebingungan, penyesalan, kengerian dan kesunyian atau entah apa lagi lukisan yang patut diberikan kepada seorang yang baru selesai membunuh.

Polisi menggeleng-geleng kepala sambil menyuruh dia duduk di lantai. Kepalanya terkulai layu. Ia capek sekali lalu tertidur. Tidak lama kemudian seorang anggota polisi yang lain menggoyang-goyang kepalanya. Matanya yang merah, semerah darah yang telah ditumpahkan, membelalak kaget melihat sang polisi menggoyang-goyang sepatu yang telah robek di depannya.

'Ya, ini dia sepatu tuanku yang selalu dipakai melayani misa!' teriak Aloysius.

'Seekor anjing membawa sepatu ini, ke lapangan bola, seorang anak menemukan anjing itu sedang mengunyah-ngunyah sepatu itu. Dipukulnya anjing itu, dibawanya sepatu ini kepada kami,' kata polisi.

Segera sesudah itu, Alo dimasukkan dalam sel. Matanya tiba-tiba memagut seorang yang terasing sendiri di pojok. Mata keduanya saling mengucap selamat bertemu dalam kesunyian dan keterasingan. Kemudian keduanya berkata-kata.

'Membunuh?'

'Ya.'

'Mengapa membunuh?'

'Saya membunuh karena angin. Angin merobohkan pepaya saya ke kebun orang lain. Orang lain memetik buahnya. Saya marah. Dia marah. Angin menyebabkan saya membunuh dia.'

'Saya membunuh karena kulit dan kerongkongan. Sepatu kulit pastor hilang dibawa anjing, kerongkongannya menuduh saya mencuri.'

Keduanya sangat sendiri, ketika lonceng gereja kampung berkelenongan menyambut jenasah turun dari lereng gunung.

Dikutip dari 'Nostalgia Nusatenggara'
oleh Gerson Poyk.

XVI.D. Pekerjaan Rumah (Homework)

To check your understanding of the story you have just studied, and to give you practice in the active use of Indonesian, write (in Indonesian) ten comprehension questions on it, and answer them as fully as you can. The questions should be directed to the main points of the story. Try to construct your own sentences, don't simply adapt those in the text.

XVI.A. English Version

INEM

Inem was just one of the little girls who were my friends. She was eight — two years older than myself, and in no way different from the others; or if she

were, it was that by the standards of our village, she was pretty, a pleasure to look at. She was well mannered, unspoilt, capable and conscientious, and these qualities spread her fame to the surrounding villages, where many a parent said of her: she would be a fine daughter-in-law.

And one day, while she was boiling water in the kitchen, she said to me: 'Gus Muk, I'm going to be married.'

'How on earth?' I said.

'Really. A week ago a proposal was made to my parents. Mother, father and the family look upon it favourably.'

'How wonderful to be a bride,' I exclaimed gaily.

'Of course. I'll be bought beautiful clothes, be dressed in bridal attire, adorned with flowers, and made up with powder, mascara and eye-shadow, — how wonderful . . . wonderful.'

And so it turned out. One afternoon her mother paid us a call. (At that time Inem was placed in my parents' care. She was expected to help with the cooking, and to play with myself and my younger brothers and sisters).

Inem's mother earned a living by drawing batik. When the women in our village were not working in the rice-fields, they worked at batik. Some worked on sarongs, others on head cloths. The poorer ones worked on head cloths, because these were more quickly finished, and thus brought a quicker return. And Inem's mother earned a living by working on head cloths. The white cotton and wax she got from her employer at Toko Ijo.[1] For every two kerchiefs finished, she got one and a half cents. On average, a person could complete between eight and eleven cloths a day.

Inem's father habitually indulged in cock fighting. Day in day out he did nothing but gamble on the prowess of his fighting cocks. If he was beaten, his cock was lost to the victor, and he had to pay one 'ringgit', or at least 75 cents. Otherwise he played cards with his neighbours, staking a cent at a time.

Sometimes he was away from home for a fortnight, or even a month, wandering around on foot; when he came back it meant he had money.

When Inem's mother called, Inem was boiling water in the kitchen. I, too, went out to meet her mother. And she, mother and myself sat on the low red couch.

'Ma'am' said Inem's mother,' I've come to ask for Inem back.'

'But why? Isn't it better for her to be here? You don't have to pay for her keep, and she can learn to cook.'

'But Ma'am, after the harvest I intend to give her in marriage.'

'Eh,' exclaimed mother, startled, 'give her in marriage?'

'Yes Ma'am, she's ripe for marriage now, she's eight,' said Inem's mother.

Now mother laughed, to her guest's surprise.

'At eight, isn't she still a child?' mother then asked.

'We aren't aristocrats, Ma'am. I think she's even a year too old to remain unmarried. Asih gave his daughter in marriage when she was two years younger.

My mother tried to dissuade her, but Inem's mother had other arguments, and finally said: 'Actually I feel that it's fortunate someone has asked for her. If we refuse this time, perhaps there will be nobody else, and isn't it a disgrace to have a daughter an old maid. Later perhaps she'll be able to help us out with our daily needs.'

Mother let this pass. Then she looked at me and said: 'Get the betel box and the spitoon.' I went to get the betel box, and a spitoon made of brass.

'And what does your husband say?'

'Inem's father agrees, of course. Especially as Markaban has a rich father — and he's an only child. And now he's started to deal in buffaloes at Rembang, Cepu, Medang, Pati, Ngawen and here at Blora too,' said Inem's mother.

Mother seemed happier on hearing this, but I didn't understand why. Then she called Inem, who was boiling water in the kitchen. Inem came, and mother asked: 'Inem, do you want to marry?'

Inem bowed her head. She deeply respected mother. I never once heard her demur. And people like that are not uncommon: they lack the vitality to react to anything at all said to them.

Then I saw her face light up. I had often seen her like that. If she were given anything at all that pleased her, her face would light up. But she did not normally say thank you. Among the simple folk of our village, the expression 'thank you' is still uncommon. The happiness reflected in the features is sufficient substitute for those words.

'Yes Ma'am.' said Inem, very quietly, almost inaudibly.

Then mother and her visitor chewed betel. Mother herself did not care to chew betel very often. She only did so when she had a woman visitor. And from time to time she spat into the brass spitoon.

'Mbok Inem,'[2] said Mother, when Inem had returned to the kitchen, 'It's wrong to give a mere child in marriage.'

Mbok Inem was puzzled to hear this. But she didn't say anything. Nor was there a questioning expression in her eyes.

'I married when I was eighteen,' said mother. Mbok Inem's expression of puzzlement faded. She was no longer puzzled. But she still remained silent.

'Mbok Inem, it's wrong to give a mere child in marriage,' mother repeated.

And Mbok Inem appeared puzzled again.

'The children will be stunted.'

Once more Mbok Inem's puzzlement faded.

'Yes Ma'am,' she then said frigidly, 'but my mother too married when she was eight.'

Mother paid no attention but continued: 'Not only will the children be stunted, but their health will be affected.'

'Yes Ma'am, but we are accounted a long lived family. My mother is still alive, even though she is more than 59. And my grandmother is still alive. I imagine that she's 74. She's still fit, and able to pound maize.'

Mother till paid no attention, but continued: 'All the more so if her husband too is a child.'

'Yes, Ma'am, but Markaban is seventeen.'

'Seventeen! My husband didn't marry me until he was thirty.'

Mbok Inem was silent. She continually twisted the quid of tobacco stuck between her lips, shifting it from left to right, and then rolling it up to rub against her black teeth.

Mother had no further arguments at her disposal to attempt to dissuade her guest from her course. She said: 'If the marriage you are thinking of is to take place, then may she have a good husband who can look after her properly. May she meet her match.'

Mbok Inem then took her leave, still twisting the tobacco round in her mouth.

'May no harm come to that little child.'

'Why would any harm come to her, mother?' I asked.

'Nothing Muk, nothing.' Then mother changed the subject.

'If the financial position of the family improves, perhaps we won't lose any more chickens.'

'Do they steal our chickens?' I asked.

'No, Muk, it's nothing,' she said quietly. 'Such a child as young as that. Just eight. Poor creature! But they need money, and the only way they can get it is by giving their daughter in marriage.'

Then mother went to the vegetable patch at the back of the house to pick some snake beans for the evening meal.

A fortnight after her visit, Mbok Inem came again, this time to take her child. She appeared very pleased when Inem made no objection to be taken.

And when Inem was about to depart our house, to leave our family circle for ever, she spoke to me at the kitchen door: 'Good bye, Muk, I'm going now,' she said, very softly.

She always spoke softly. And softness of speech, according to our social customs, indicated respect. She went with the joy of a child about to receive a new dress.

From that moment Inem no longer lived in our house. I felt very deeply the loss of my close friend. From then on it was not Inem who took me to the bathroom to wash my feet in the evening before going to bed, but my adopted sister.

Occasionally I felt a great longing to meet her. Not rarely, when I lay in bed, I remembered her as her mother led her away, and the pair of them left our house. Inem's home was behind ours, only separated by a wooden fence.

Now she had been gone a month. I often went to her house to play with her. And mother was invariably angry when she found out I had heen there. She always said: 'What is there for you to learn at Inem's house?' And I never answered. Mother always had her reasons when she scolded me. Every word of hers was a thick wall impenetrable to argument. Therefore it was better for me to remain silent. And as the key to her anger, it could almost be guaranteed she would repeat the sentence so often on her lips:

'What do you want to play with her for? Aren't there plenty of other children you can ask to play? Moreover she's a woman who is soon to be married.'

But I still went secretly to her house. Sometimes, the very existence of the prohibition was puzzling, and its only importance was as something to he disobeyed. And in this disobedience I found pleasure. For children such as myself at that time — oh how many prohibitions and taboos were heaped upon our heads. Yes, it was as if everything in the world were appointed to keep watch over us, forbidding whatever we did or desired. Whether we liked it or not, we children felt that the world was exclusively for adults.

Then came the wedding day.

Five days before the wedding took place, Inem's family were busy cooking sweetmeats and food in the kitchen. This attracted me even more frequently to her house.

The day before the wedding, Inem was beautifully made up. Mother ordered me to go to the house to take 5 kilos of rice and 25 cents as our contribution to the feast. And in the afternoon we children came to crowd round and admire.

The wisp of hair around her forehead and temples and her eyebrows had been carefully shaved and shaped, and thickened with mascara. Her tiny hair-knot was made larger by a hairpiece, and was decorated with paper flowers on a wire thread which we called **Sunduk mentul**. Her dress was of satin, and her sarong a piece of inexpensive batik made in Solo. All had been hired from a Chinese in the Chinese quarter near the town square. Her gold rings and bracelets were hired too.

The house was decorated with sprays of **waringin** leaves and young coconut fronds. Pairs of crossed tricolour flags (the red white and blue Dutch flag), surrounded by palm leaves, were fastened to every wall, and the house posts too were decorated with three coloured ribbon. Mother herself came and joined in the preparations. But not for long. This was something mother rarely did except for a very close neighbour. Within an hour, she went home. And just at that moment, there arrived gifts from Inem's future husband: cakes, a billy goat, rice, a box of salt, a sack of husked coconuts, and a half sack of granulated sugar.

It was just after the harvest. Rice was cheap. And when rice is cheap, all foodstuffs are cheap. That is why after the harvest many weddings were celebrated. And because of this, Inem's family were unable to arrange a **wayang** (shadow play) performance. There had been so many requests from other families, including those from other villages, that no **dalang** (puppet master) was available.

So because there was no puppet master available Inem's family then, had to make do with a **joget**[3]. At first this caused some acrimony, for Mbok Inem's side of the family were of the ranks of **ulama** (religious teachers). But Pak Inem insisted on having his way: the dancers arrived with the gamelan orchestra and the dance was held.

In our district, a **tayuban**[4] was exclusively for those who took part in the dancing, and the only spectators were children whose knowledge of sex did not extend beyond kissing. Those who were older found it embarrassing,

especially the women, who never attended. And at a **tayuban** in our district — in order to increase sexual excitation — strong drink, spirits, beer, whisky or gin were served.

A **tayuban** lasted two days and two nights. We children enjoyed seeing the men and women dancing and kissing, and from time to time striking their glasses together, and gulping down the liquor as they danced, shouting: Hurrah!

And even though mother forbade me to watch, I still went secretly. 'Why do you keep going to look at those reprobates? Look at your **kiai** (religious teacher). Even though he is Pak Inem's brother-in-law, he still doesn't watch. See for yourself!'

Our **kiai**'s house also was behind ours, to the right of Inem's. Subsequently the absence of the **kiai** could be counted on to liven any conversation and likewise served to introduce two topics guaranteed to set tongues wagging: the **kiai** was indeed a holy man, and Inem's father a scoundrel.

Mother justified her anger with words that at that time I could not understand.

'Don't you realise? They are people with no respect for women,' she said incisively.

And when the bridegroom was brought to be presented to the bride, Inem, who was seated on a bridal seat, was led forward. The bridegroom had now reached the porch. Inem knelt and paid homage to her husband, and washed his feet with perfumed water from a brass jug. Then the bride and groom were bound together and led to the bridal seat and those present could be heard saying to each other: 'One child becomes two, one child becomes two, one child becomes two.'

The women onlookers expressed pleasure, as though it were they themselves who were about to receive some happiness.

It was then that I saw Inem was crying; her powder was spoilt as the tears streamed down her pretty face. At home I asked mother: 'Why did she cry, mother?'

'If a bride cries it is because she recalls her ancestors who died long years ago. Their spirits descend to attend the ceremony, and they rejoice that their posterity is safely married,' mother replied.

I never thought about her words. It was only later that I found out why Inem was crying. She had wanted to urinate, but was afraid to say so.

The feast ended uneventfully. No more guests came to offer contributions to the feast, and the house returned to its usual state. And when the collectors came for the instalments due on the goods hired, Inem's father had left Blora. After the marriage, Inem and her mother worked at their batiks day and night. And were anyone to pass their house at 3 a.m., the chances were they would still be working, the smoke from the pot of wax curling up between them. But apart from that, we often overheard quarrels from the house.

And once, while I was sleeping beside my mother, I was awakened by loud screams: 'I don't want to, I don't want to.'

It was still dark. And the screaming went on and on, accompanied by thuds and blows on the door. I knew that it was Inem screaming, I recognised her voice.

'Mother, why is Inem screaming?' I asked.

'They're quarreling; may no harm come to that little child.' she said, but she didn't explain.

'Why should any harm come to her, mother?' I asked, insisting.

Mother didn't answer. And when the screaming had subsided, we fell asleep again. Such screaming could be guaranteed almost every night. Scream after scream. And whenever I heard it I asked mother what it was about, but she never told me. Sometimes she only sighed: 'Alas, such a little child.'

And one day, Inem came to our house, and went straight to my mother, her face was white and bloodless. At first she remained silent, setting the mood of the meeting with a restrained weeping.

'Why are you crying, Inem?' asked Mother. 'Have you been quarrelling again?'

'Ma'am,' said Inem, 'I hope' — between her sobs —'you could be kind enough to take me back again.'

'But don't you have a husband, Inem?'

And Inem wept again. Amid her tears, she said: 'I can't stand it, Ma'am

'Why, Inem? aren't you happy with your husband?' asked mother.

'Ma'am, pity me! Every night all he does is play roughly with me (in bed).'

"But can't you say, 'please, don't'?"

'I'm frightened, Ma'am, I'm frightened of him. He's so big. And if he plays with me he is so rough that I can't breathe. Can't you take me back?' she pleaded piteously.

'If you had no husband, of course I would take you. But you have a husband,' said mother.

And Inem wept again on hearing mother's words. 'Ma'am, I don't want to have a husband.'

'Even though you don't want him, you still have him, Inem. Perhaps, in the course of time your husband will become better, and the pair of you can live happily. Earlier, didn't you want to be married?' said mother.

'Yes Ma'am, but . . . but . . . '

'Inem, no matter how difficult, a woman must serve her husband faithfully. If you do not do so, you will be cursed by your ancestors,' said mother. Inem wept all the more, so that she could not speak for weeping.

'Now, Inem, you must promise that you will always have your husband's meals ready. If ever you have a spare moment pray that God will ever watch over him. Promise you will wash his clothes, and massage him when his work has left him weary; **kerik**[5] him if he gets a chill

Inem remained silent, her tears still flowing.

'Alright then: go home, and from now on serve him faithfully. Whether he's good or bad you must serve him faithfully for no other reason than that he is your husband.'

Inem still remained motionless on the floor.

'Stand up, and go back to your husband. You . . . if you leave your husband just like this, no good will come of it for you, either now or later,' said mother.

'Yes Ma'am,' she said abjectly. Slowly she stood up and walked home.

'Alas, she's so small,' said mother.

'Mother, does father ever play roughly with you?' I asked.

She studied my expression intently. Then her seriousness vanished and she smiled. 'No,' she said. 'Your father is the best man in the whole world, Muk.'

Then she went to the kitchen, took a hoe, and worked beside me on the vegetable patch.

A year passed, unnoticed. And then Inem came again. She had grown almost out of recognition during those twelve months, and looked quite adult, even though she was barely nine. As usual, as soon as she met mother, she sat before her, and bowed her head. Then she said: 'Ma'am, I don't have a husband now.'

'What did you say?'

'I don't have a husband now.'

'Are you divorced then?' mother asked.

'Yes Ma'am.'

'Why are you divorced from him?'

Inem did not answer.

'Didn't you serve him faithfully?'

'I think I always did, Ma'am.'

'Did you massage him when he came home tired from work?' asked mother inquiringly.

'Yes Ma'am, I did everything you said.'

'Then why are you divorced?'

'Ma'am, he often beat me.'

'Beat you, a small child like you.'

'I served him faithfully, Ma'am. And if he beats me, and I bear the pain, isn't that faithful service too Ma'am?' she asked, seriously, wanting an explanation.

Mother was silent. She looked at Inem closely. 'Beaten,' mother then whispered.

'Yes Ma'am — beaten, just as father and mother beat me.'

'Perhaps you didn't serve him faithfully enough; how could a husband beat a wife if she did.'

Inem didn't answer. She changed the subject. 'Ma'am, will you take me back now?'

There was no hesitation in mother's reply, she said decisively: 'Inem, now you are a divorced woman, and in my house there are many young men of marriageable age. Don't you think it would seem improper?'

'They will not beat me!' said the divorcee.

'No, but that wasn't what I meant. People would consider it improper were I to take a young divorcee like you into a home where there are many men.

'Because of me?'

'No, Inem, because of propriety.'

'Propriety, Ma'am. Is it because of propriety that I can't stay with you?'

'Yes, that is so Inem.'

The divorcee said nothing further. She remained seated on the floor. Apparently she had no intention of moving from where she was sitting. Mother went close to her, and patted her shoulder — sympathetically.

'Now Inem — you had better go and help your parents earn a living. It's a pity, but I can't have you back.'

Two tear drops formed in the corners of the little girl's eyes. She stood up. Despondently she walked away, leaving our house and returning to that of her parents. From that moment she rarely appeared out of doors.

And from then on, the divorcee of nine — because she was only a burden to her parents household — could be beaten by anyone and everyone: her mother, her younger brother, her uncle, the neighbours, her aunt. But she never came again to our house.

Often we overheard her cries of pain. When she screamed, I put my hands over my ears. And mother steadfastly guarded the good name of her household.

1 The Green Shop. There is no apparent significance in the name.
2 Literally : 'Mother of Inem' just as Pak Inem means 'Father of Inem.' This form of address, very common in Indonesia, and awkward if translated literally, is known as teknonymy.
3 A troupe of dancing girls.
4 Similar in meaning to **joget**, but the dance referred to here is one of deliberate sexual excitation which comes to a climax when the girl leads her partner out of the public view.
5 A 'folk' treatment for headaches and chills which consists of scraping the back of the neck with a coin until the skin is inflamed, so that the wind causing the illness can come out. (To have a chill in Indonesian is masuk angin.)

XVI.C. English Version

TIMORESE BLOOD

Five years ago, Aloysius Waiwerang left the Nusakambangan prison with a good name — in the sense that many people were sorry to see him go, especially prison officials, for they had lost a fine boar hunter; one who would run chasing a boar and straightway kill it with his spear. In addition Alo was very dependable and friendly towards anyone and especially to the prison governor, the prison officials and their families.

He had stayed there for five years. He had committed only one crime: he had killed a priest with the machete that always hung at his waist. It was common among some of the men in his village to settle a quarrel with a machete. Ah, but why had he killed the old priest, who had lived in his village for a decade?

When he was a child, it was the priest who had taught him religion when he was at primary school. When he had grown up — because his education had not gone beyond primary school — there was no choice for him but to work on the land and then in addition to this he worked at the Catholic mission in his village. This sideline was agreeable enough: he used to carry the priest's knapsack whenever the latter made his visits round the villages to tell his fellow men of the love of Christ.

In the knapsack were things connected with the priest's duties: religious books, clothing, food, and a spare pair of shoes. Alo had nothing but a pair of black shorts and a singlet which was almost the colour of the village soil, a dirty yellow. His other possession was a threadbare (thin) old sarong which was always draped across his shoulders.

He was a young man, well able to endure cold and heat as he carried the priest's knapsack. He had done this with total loyalty to the priest for several years. Christian loyalty — if one might put it that way.

This loyalty came to an end one day in an isolated village of about ten households.

When it happened, the two of them, Alo and the priest, had just arrived from a village situated in a prosperous valley with cultivated fields and a little wet rice interspersed with coffee and citrus plantations. Its inhabitants were hot-blooded that is excitable (quick-tempered), but full of faith, hope and charity. Alongside the large houses made of grass and fibre and various types of wood brought from the mountain surrounding the valley, were stalls for fat healthy cattle. In the midst of these dwellings for man and beast there was a house of God which had a corrugated iron roof and a spire pointing upwards. Around it were a guest-house belonging to the mission, a school building and teachers' houses.

That is where the priest and Alo had just come from. They had been there a week ministering to the community of that village in the valley, then, in accordance with the plan of their journey, the priest, together with Alo, came to the village of ten families to stay for a day.

On Sunday, the priest would say Mass, give Communion, and after Benediction in the afternoon, the pair of them would set out late at night for

another isolated village on the other side of the mountain to do the same service there.

It had taken them about eight hours to walk from that village in the valley. They were both quite tired from climbing the winding track scoring the mountain slope. But as soon as they had arrived, Alo quickly cooked rice, and made the priest a glass of tea. This was a routine task for him.

The priest too, went through his routine: mechanically his hands moved steadily opening the haversack, taking out the books and placing them on a bench, then sorting out his clothing, his towel, his toothbrush, his comb, his soap then suddenly he peered intently into his sack and frowned. Then automatically his sense of logic began to operate.

All the time he had been at the senior seminary, and all the time he had been a servant of Christ, the priest had been trained to think logically. As his hands moved steadily and mechanically emptying his haversack, the signal carried by the mechanism linking hand to eye, to forehead to cerebrum (literally large brain), to cerebellum (literally small brain) then in a mysterious way penetrated his heart, which pumped his blood furiously. His intuition and emotion were also affected. But what was all this?

Goodness knows what it was called, but everything revolved around a missing pair of shoes.

In such a situation, the priest was a man who could contain his emotions. He was a good shepherd to his flock, and because of that he used systematic thought first and only then his emotion. They were alone in a hut next to the chapel. Alo was busy preparing the meal when the priest quietly called him. Between them was the gaping haversack. Beside Alo were the contents of the haversack.

'Alo,' said the priest gently.

'Yes, Father,' replied Alo submissively.

'The Lord gave us brains to think with, and anyone who does not accept this gift and make use of it, is disobeying the will of God.'

'Yes, Father, that is so,' said Alo in a low voice, approving everything the priest said.

'Alo, I am using my brains: how is it that my shoes are not in the haversack, whereas I remember very well I myself put them into the haversack before we set out from the valley.'

Alo was startled. He looked at the priest's feet. His master's boots, covered with dust, still encased his feet.

'Father,' said Alo, 'I only carried the haversack. As far as I remember, I never opened it on the way. Now, as far as I remember, I did put it down once on a clean rock sticking out in the middle of a river flowing at the foot of the mountain where we stopped and bathed. The rock was surrounded by water. No one could possibly have taken them. According to a clear and sane mind eels and prawns cannot steal shoes. After bathing, didn't you yourself see me carry the haversack? Didn't you?'

While listening to Alo, the priest just nodded, thinking that what Alo was saying also made sense. It was not possible that an animal had played a part in the loss. In that case who other than a human being, could have stolen

them? But this presented a major difficulty. Who could have been the human being who stole them? He was well aware that since they set out from the valley, there had only been the two of them on the face of the earth. The third person with them was Christ, but Christ had given to man — to the priest the ability to think logically, so it was the two human beings themselves who had to settle the question of the shoes.

Then all creation became silent, totally silent as gradually the priest became irritated (still) thinking and trying to remember.

On the other side, that of Alo, the same process was taking place. He was astonished, disturbed, irritated, as he was thinking and trying to remember. He really wanted to know where the shoes had fallen, abandoning this pair of God's creatures.

What else was there to say? It was a long way (quite a distance) from the village in the valley to the village on the mountain slopes, but by using memory and mind the distance became close and eventually the priest shortened it with a reasonable conclusion:

'Alo,' he said, 'according to a sane mind, no eel or fish in the river could have stolen those shoes, could they?'

'That's true, Father,' said Alo. 'But think carefully, perhaps you forgot to put them in. Perhaps the shoes were left behind.'

'I trust my memory. Even so, can you remind me, and remind yourself, was there anything left behind there?'

Alo thought for a moment. 'As far as I remember,' he said, 'there weren't any shoes left behind. For years now I've been trained not to forget any of your things. It is something odd for me, if the shoes have disappeared.'

The priest was silent. It was as if there was a vacuum in front of him, a vacuum which had to be filled with truth, and according to logic, there was no need to look very far for that truth. Who else but Alo could have stolen them.

'Alo, it was you who stole the shoes,' said the priest confidently, defending the correctness of his conclusion. According to any sane mind: it was impossible for a fish in the river to have stolen the shoes.

Alo was shocked. His heart pounded like a piece of machinery. His feelings had been hurt. Who could defend him against this accusation based on logic. There weren't any fish that could steal. An eel, no matter how long, would not grab shoes. Only a human being could have stolen them. He realised only too well the validity of this kind of reasoning, and at the same time realized that he was trapped in the vacuum left by the disappearance of the priest's shoes. For the sake of the truth that he himself lived by on this earth, a truth that the priest was no longer able to live by — because he had put forward a conceptual truth — he had to escape from this vacuum, he had to have courage.

The priest had abandoned him. Suddenly Alo's courage vanished. He felt more and more isolated, asking himself over and over: 'Who could have stolen the shoes?' As a Christian he tried to visualise the face of Christ in his imagination and at the same time to ask for help to solve this problem. But it seemed that Christ only smiled and said: 'My child Alo, you did not steal.'

Then suddenly his self-respect returned. The priest had insulted the child of Christ named Aloysius Waiwerang. This could not be tolerated. Alo was deeply hurt.

But, alas, the priest was God's representative on earth. Why did the representative of God not see the real truth?

As Alo's mind was in turmoil and he was feeling terribly hurt because he had been accused of stealing the shoes, suddenly there was the sound of a thunderbolt that shattered his heart .

'Alo,' said the priest severely, 'confess to God and to me that you stole the shoes.'

Alas, Alo's awareness of himself as a man living by the truth that he did not steal the shoes, disappeared.

He was drawn into the movement of the blood which flowed swifter and became hotter, and it pressed against his brain, so that he was no longer able to think, and then the blood descended to the veins of his eyes which suddenly became red, so that he was hardly able to see the beauty of the world from the mountain slope. But he was still able to stand by himself as a man. His heart cried out because his dignity had been trampled on. In other words he was still capable of defending himself despite his limitations.

He was able to look the priest in the face, through his own eyes red with all their hatred. 'This man,' so he perceived, 'this man thinks that he alone stands on the face of the earth with the truth that is with him.'

At the same time the priest looked at him with eyes supported by the conviction that he held to be the truth. The two of them stared at each other like cocks about to fight.

Alo could not bear any longer to meet his gaze. His feelings were deeply hurt because his dignity had been driven to the vacuum by the accusation of the lost shoes.

Alo left the priest and came back with the machete in the sheath hanging from his waist. But when he was about to show that he was able to wipe that false assumption from the eyes and throat of the priest, he came up against the fortress which is called the human conscience, on which the spirit of the love of Christ is carved. He knelt and prayed in front of the priest.

Seeing him do this, the kindly priest also prayed that Christ would forgive Alo's sin of stealing the shoes.

When their eyes met — God help them — they were both alone on the face of the earth. One was defending his personal dignity, the other defending his logical conclusion.

Alo made the sign of the cross, then kissed the hand and foot of the priest. All the world became silent, and Christ too, when Alo said, 'Father, I did not steal the shoes. Don't insult me.' Then he drew out the machete with a mechanical movement of hand, heart and blood together, and then directed it at the priest's throat, which had performed the mechanical function of carrying the voice that accused him of stealing the shoes.

Alo's self-respect returned instantly. He stood alone on top of a high mountain in his greatness as a man who has defended the truth. Beside him the body of the priest lay alone, full of mystery and stupidity because of his

logical thought about the disappearance of the shoes. Neither his hands nor any part of him functioned any more.

Suddenly Alo was overwhelmed with loneliness, living in truth and fear. Truly, he had not stolen the shoes, but he was quite horrified because he had killed a human being like himself. Truth and fear became the dominant aspects of his personality.

With these two forces, which greatly differed with each other, he went down into the valley to the police post. It is usual for a Timorese who has killed someone to give himself up to the police. It is a curious reaction. Listen to the conversation that took place with the policeman.

'Why did you kill your own priest?'

'Because I was alone on the slopes of the mountain. Because of the wind. Because of the sun. Because the river made me weary, because I was angry at being unjustly accused of stealing the shoes,' said Alo in confusion, remorse, fear and loneliness or whatever else may be said to describe a man who has just murdered someone.

The policeman shook his head and ordered him to sit on the floor. His head hung limply. He was very weary, and fell asleep. Not long after, another policeman shook him by the head. His red eyes, as red as the blood he had spilt, opened wide in astonishment at the sight of the policeman waving torn shoes in front of them.

'That's them; they are the shoes my master always wore when saying Mass!' cried Aloysius.

'A dog picked them up — took them to the football field, a child found the dog chewing them. He hit the dog, and brought the shoes to us,' said the policeman.

Soon after that Alo was put in a cell. His eyes suddenly fell upon someone all alone in the corner. Two pairs of eyes greeted each other in silence and in isolation. They spoke to each other.

'Murder?'

'Yes.'

'Why did you do it?'

'I killed because of the wind. The wind blew down my papaya tree onto another man's land. He took the fruit. I was angry. He was angry. The wind made me kill him.'

'I killed because of shoes and vocal cords The priest's leather shoes vanished: They were carried off by a dog; his vocal cords accused me of stealing.'

They were both very much alone when the village church bell tolled to greet the body brought down from the mountain side.

WORD LIST

The words in this list are arranged alphabetically by word according to their root forms, e.g. **berbicara** appears under **bicara; memegang** under **pegang; kelihatan** under **lihat; penangis** under **tangis**.
Remember that the prefixs are:
ber- and its sound changes
ke-
me- and its sound changes
memper-
pe- and its sound changes
per-
se-
ter-
Compound words and expressions using the root immediately follow the root; affixed forms are then listed in alphabetical order, e.g. **alam, alam pikiran, berpengalaman, mengalami, pengalaman.**
Alternative (and often more common) forms of some root words are given in parentheses after the root. These alternative forms are not listed separately, e.g. **hiba (iba).**
An = sign at the end of an entry indicates a cross reference, e.g. **mantu**, son-, daughter-in-law = **menantu**.
The following abbreviations have been used: e.o. each other; n (noun); o's. (one's); o.s. (oneself); s.o. (someone); s.o.'s (someone's); s.t. (something).

A

abstrak, abstract
abu, ash
acara, program, agenda. **mengacara**, to start off with s.t.
ada, to be, to exist; to have, possess; there is, there are, **ada-ada saja**, there's always something. **adakalanya**, at times, sometimes, from time to time. **adalah**, is, are. **adanya**, existence, presence, situation. **berada**, to be (located in); well-to-do. **keadaan**, situation, condition. **mengadakan**, to organise, hold (an event)
adat, custom(ary), tradition(al). **adat-istiadat**, traditions and customs
adegan, scene (in a play)
adik, younger brother/sister
adil, fair, just. **keadilan**, justice. **pengadilan**, court
adu, mengadu, to complain. **mengadukan**, to lodge a complaint, take someone (to court). **pengadu jago**, cockfighter
aduh, oh! ouch! wow!
aduhai = **aduh**
agak, rather. **agaknya**, probably, perhaps

agama, religion. **beragama**, to adhere to or follow a particular religion
agar, so that, in order to, to ensure that. **agar supaya**, so that, in order to
agung, great. **keagungan**, greatness
ahli, expert. **ahli bahasa**, linguistic expert, language authority. **ahli bedah**, surgeon. **ahli ilmu jiwa**, psychologist. **ahli pahat**, sculptor. **ahli sosiologi**, sociologist. **keahlian**, expertise, skill.
air, water. **air kopi daun**, brew of coffee leaves. **air ledeng**, piped water supply. **air mata**, tear(s). **air minum**, drinking water. **air muka**, (facial) expression. **berair**, to have water, to flow, to water, watering
ajaib, miraculous. **keajaiban**, magical power, miracle
ajak, mengajak, to invite, ask s.o. to join one in doing s.t.
ajal, death
ajar, ajaran, teachings, doctrine. **belajar**, to study, learn. **mempelajari**, to study s.t. in depth. **mengajar**, to teach (s.o.). **mengajarkan**, to teach s.t. **pelajar**, school student. **pelajaran**, lesson, course
akal, mind, brain. **masuk akal**, plausible, within reason, stands to reason
akan, will (indicates future), about. **seakan-akan**, as if, as though
akar, root
akhir, end, final. **akhirnya**, finally, at last, eventually. **berakhir**, to end. **terakhir**, final, last
akibat, consequence, result. **mengakibatkan**, to result, end in
aku, I, me. **mengaku**, to confess, admit. **mengakui**, to confess, acknowledge, recognise
alam, world, nature. **alam pikiran**, inspiration, mental universe, contents of o's. mind. **berpengalaman**, to have experience, be experienced. **mengalami**, to experience. **pengalaman**, experience.
alangkah, how! (exclamation). **alangkah senang**, how wonderful
alas, base. **alasan**, reason, basis, grounds, argument
alat, instrument, tool, means, medium. **peralatan**, equipment, celebration, feast
alias, otherwise called, same as, alias
alim, religious, devout
aling, aling(an), screen, protection
alir, aliran, flow. **mengalir**, to flow
alis, eyebrow
almarhum, the late
alternatif, alternative
alun-alun, town square
aman, keamanan, safety, security
amarah, anger
amat, very, extremely. **mengamat-amati**, to watch closely. **mengamati**, to watch closely, observe, examine. **pengamat-amatan**, scrutiny, observation
ambil, mengambil, to take, get, fetch, make (a decision). **mengambilkan**, to get s.t. for s.o.
amboi, hey! alas!
amplop, envelope
ampun, mercy. **mengampuni**, to forgive
anak, child. **anak kunci**, key. **anak rambut**, wisp(s) of hair
analisa, analysis
ancam, mengancam, to threaten
anda, (written Anda) you, your
andaikata, supposing that, if
andong, horse-drawn vehicle

aneh, extraordinary, strange, odd, peculiar. **keanehan**, strangeness, oddity, peculiarity
aneka, different, all sorts of, all kinds of. **beraneka-ragam**, all sorts of (ways)
anggap, anggapan, assumption. **beranggapan**, to have an opinion.
menganggap, to think, believe, consider, regard
anggauta, member = **anggota**
anggota, member., **keanggotaan**, membership
angguk, a nod, **mengangguk** (intrans), to nod. **mengangguk-anggukkan** (trans.), to nod several times
anggur, menganggur, to be unemployed, have time on o's. hands. **penganggur**, unemployed person. **pengangguran**, unemployment
angin, wind
angka, marks, figure
angkasa, the sky, firmament. **angkasawan**, spaceman
angkat, angkat-mengangkat, anything to do with carrying things. **angkatan**, generation. **angkatan laut**, navy. **angkatan udara**, air force. **berangkat**, to leave, depart. **keberangkatan**, departure. **memberangkatkan**, to dispatch, send. **mengangkat**, to lift, raise; to take away. **pemberangkatan**, the dispatch (e.g. of troops)
angkuh, arrogant
angkut, mengangkut, to transport, carry. **pengangkutan**, transport(ation)
anjing, dog
anjur, menganjurkan, to suggest
antap, solid, sound
antar, mengantarkan, to take, accompany, escort s.o. **pengantar**, messenger, courier
antara, between, among. **antara lain**, among other things
antusias, enthusiasm
anugerah, boon, gift
apa, question indicator; what. **apabila**, when, if. **apakah**, whether, if, question indicator. **apalah**! what (rhetorical question). **apa pun**, whatever. **apa saja**, anything at all. **tidak apa**, it doesn't matter. **tidak apalah**, never mind
api, fire
arah, direction. **mengarahkan**, to aim, direct
arak, rice wine
arang, charcoal
arti, meaning, significance. **berarti**, to mean, have significance, have a consequence; to be of value. **mengartikan**, to understand, interpret
artikel, article
arung, mengarungi, to wade across or through s.t. = **harung**
arus, flow, current
arwah, spirit, soul
asa, hope (n)
asal, origin, source. **asalkan**, as long as, provided that, on the condition that. **berasal (dari)**, to come (originate) (from)
asap, smoke (n)
asas, principle, foundation, rationale
asing, foreign, alien. **keterasingan**, isolation. **terasing**, isolated
asli, original, indigenous, natural
astaga, God forgive me! God help me.
asuh, mengasuh, to take care (of child), to be responsible for, take charge of (e.g. of newspaper column, T.V. program)
asyik, absorbed, engrossed. **mengasyikkan**, fascinating

atap, roof. **beratap(kan) lalang**, to have a grass roof. **beratap seng**, to have a corrugated iron roof.
atas, on, over, above, for. **atas-mengatasi**, to out do e.o.
atau, or. **atau malahan**, or rather
atur, mengatur, to regulate, arrange, order. **peraturan**, regulation. **teratur**, regular(ly), ordered
Auri, abbreviation of **Angkatan Udara Republik Indonesia**, (= Air Force of the Republic of Indonesia)
awal, beginning, first, early. **awalan**, prefix. **berawalan**, to have a prefix
awan, cloud
awas, mengawasi, to supervise, keep an eye on
ayah, father
ayam, chicken, hen, cock. **ayam jantan**, rooster
ayun, ayunan, swing. **mengayun(kan)** to rock, swing, sway s.t. **mengayun-ayun**, to rock (baby, cradle)

B

bab, chapter
baca, bacaan, reading passage, **membaca**, to read. **pembaca**, reader.
badan, body
Badui, an aboriginal group in West Java
bagai, like, as. **bagaikan**, as if, like. **bagaimana**, how, like what. **berbagai**, several, various, assorted. **sebagai**, like, as, in the capacity of. **sebagai pengganti**, instead of (as a substitute)
bagi, for, to. **bagian**, part, share (n) = **bahagian**. **membagi**, to share, distribute, divide into **(atas)**
bagus, beautiful, good. **memperbagus**, to decorate, beautify
bahagi, bahagian, part, section = **bagian**
bahagia, happy, **kebahagiaan**, happiness
bahan, material (n)
bahas, membahas, to discuss critically
bahasa, language. **bahasa asing**, foreign language. **bahasa pengantar**, medium (i.e. language) of instruction
bahaya, danger, threat, hazard. **berbahaya**, dangerous.
bahu, shoulder
bahkan, moreover, furthermore, on the contrary
bahwa, that (conjunction)
baik, good, fine. **baik-baik**, properly. **baik. . .baik**, whether. . .whether. **baiklah**, o.k., it's better that. **kebaikan**, kindness, goodness. **memperbaiki**, to improve, repair **perbaikan**, improvement. **terbaik**, best
baju, jacket, coat. **baju kaos dalam**, singlet
bakal, future, prospective
bakar, terbakar, to catch fire, burn down (accidently), burnt
bakat, aptitude, talent
bakmi, Chinese noodles. **bakmi goreng**, fried noodles.
bakti, berbakti, to be loyal, serve devotedly
balai, balai-balai, bench = **bale**
balas, membalas, to answer, reply. **membalas guna**, to repay a favour, kindness
bale, bench = **balai**
balik, the other side, reverse. **membalik-balik**, to leaf through, turn over and over
balon, balloon

balut, membalut, to bandage, wrap up. **membalutkan**, to wrap (s.t.) around (s.t.). **pembalut**, bandage, thing (used) for bandaging
bambu, bamboo
banding, membandingkan, to compare, contrast
bang, term of address for older male = **abang**
bangga, proud. **kebanggaan**, pride
bangkar, bangkar kayu, tree
bangkit, to get up, rise
bangku, seat, bench
bangsa, nation, race. **bangsawan**, nobleman. **kebangsaan**, nationality
bangsat, scoundrel, rascal
bangun, to get up, wake up. membangun, to develop. **membangunkan**, to wake s.o. up. **pembangunan**, development
banjir, flood (n)
bank, bank
bantah, membantah, to oppose, protest, argue
bantal, pillow. **memperbantal**, to use as a pillow
banting, membanting-banting, to beat, attack, lash
bantu, bantuan, help, aid. **membantu**, to help. **pembantu**, assistant, helper
banyak, many, much, a lot **banyaknya**, amount, quantity, total number. **banyak sedikitnya**, more or less. **memperbanyak**, to increase. **sebanyak-banyaknya** = sebanyak mungkin, as much as possible
bapak, father, mister, you, your. **memperbapak**, to be a father
barang, goods, object, things. **barang apa**, whatever, anything. **barang curian**, stolen goods
barangkali, perhaps, maybe
barat, west
bareng, membarengi, to accompany s.o.
baring, berbaring, to lie down. **berbaring-baring**, resting, lying down. **terbaring**, lying
baris, barisan, row, rank
baru, new, just. **baru-baru ini**, recently. **baru saja**, just, recently, only just
basah, wet. **basah-kuyup**, soaking wet
batang, stem, stalk, pole, blade; classifier for oblong cylindrical objects. **batang rumbia**, sago palm
batas, boundary, border, limit. **batasan**, limit. **keterbatasan**, limitation. **membatasi**, to limit, border, fence, separate. **pembatasan**, restriction. **terbatas**, limited, restricted
batik, membatik, to make, do batik
batin, inner, internal, spiritual; mind
batu, stone. **batues**, ice block
bau, scent, smell, odour
bawa, membawa, to bring, take, carry. **pembawa**, bearer, carrier, the thing/person that carries. **pembawaan**, gift, talent, ability
bawah, under, underneath
bayang, bayangan, shadow, image. **membayangkan**, to describe, imagine, picture. **terbayang**, to be reflected
bayar, membayar, to pay. **pembayar**, payer, means of payment
bayi, baby
beasiswa, scholarship
beban, burden. **membebani**, to burden
bebas, free
bebek, duck
beberapa, several, a few, some
becak, pedicab
beda, contrast, difference. **berbeda**,

to differ. **membedakan**, to differentiate, distinguish, discriminate. **pembedaan**, distinction. **perbedaan**, difference
bedah, surgical operation. **membedah**, to operate
bedak, powder. **membedaki**, to powder
begini, like this, so.
begitu, like that, so, thus, such
bekal, provisions, food. **berbekal(kan)**, to have provisions
bekas, former, ex
bela, membela, to stand up for, defend
belah, side, crack. **membelah**, to cut in half, halve, to part, move through (the middle of). **sebelah-menyebelah**, on either side, around
belai, membelai, to caress, stroke
belaka, entirely, only, all, nothing but, wholly and solely
belakang, back, behind, backside, back of. **belakangan ini**, recently
belalak, membelalak, to open wide. **terbelalak**, boggle-eyed
belalang, grass-hopper, praying mantis
Belanda, Dutch
belanja, berbelanja, to go shopping. **membelanjakan**, to spend
belenggu, handcuffs, shackles. **terbelenggu**, restricted, tied, bound
belas, teen. **sebelas**, eleven
beli, beli-membeli, anything to do with buying. **membeli**, to buy. **membelikan**, to buy s.t. for s.o.
beliau, he, his, him, she, her, hers (honorific)
belok, membelok, to turn
belum, not yet. **sebelum**, before
belut, eel
bemo, motorised pedicab
benar, true, correct, right, really, truly, very. **benar-benar**, really and truly. **kebenaran**, truth, veracity, reality, validity. **membenarkan**, to correct s.t., put right; to approve of s.t. **sebenarnya**, actually, as a matter of fact
benci, hate, dislike, aversion. **kebencian**, hatred
bendar, **(bandar)** creek, ditch
bendera, flag
bengkak, swollen
bendi, horse drawn vehicle (Padang)
bentak, membentak to snap at s.o.
bentang, membentangkan, to spread out, roll out. **terbentang**, to spread out, extending outwards, jutting out
bentar, sebentar, a minute, moment, second. **sebentar-sebentar**, from time to time, frequently
benteng, fortress
bentuk, form, shape. **berbentuk**, to have the form, shape of. **membentuk**, to form
berabe, nuisance, complicated, difficult
berani, brave, daring. **keberanian**, courage, bravery
berantakan, chaos, disorder; to fall to pieces, dilapidated, in a mess
berantas, memberantas, to combat, fight against, abolish s.t.
berapa, how much? how many? which?
beras, hulled rice
berat, heavy, serious, difficult, severe, burdensome, **beratnya**, weight. **berat sebelah**, biased, one-sided. **berkeberatan**, to have an objection. **keberatan**, objection, to have an objection
beres, in order, well done. **memberes-bereskan**, to sort out/through. **membereskan**, to put in order, tidy
berhala, idol

beri, **memberi**, to give. **memberikan**, to give s.t. (to s.o.). **memberitahu**, to inform, tell. **memberitahukan . . .kepada, to inform, tell s.o., kepada, report, announce. pemberian**, gift
beringin, banyan, waringan tree
bernas, well filled (of grains, fruit); well formed (of sugar-cane)
berontak, to rebel. **pemberontak**, rebel, insurgent. **pemberontakan**, revolt, rebellion
bersih, clean. **membersihkan**, to clean s.t.
besar, big, large. **membesar**, to grow big(ger), become large. **membesarkan**, to enlarge, increase, expand; to bring up, raise. **memperbesar**, to enlarge, extend, expand, increase s.t., to make s.t. big
besok, tomorrow
betah, to stand, endure, like
betapa, how (exclamatory)
betina, female (usually of animals)
betis, calf (of the leg)
betul, really, truly, very. **betul-betul**, really, truly, seriously (emphatic). **kebetulan**, by chance, accidentally, it happened that. **sebetulnya**, actually, in fact
bhinneka, Bhinneka Tunggal Ika, Unity in Diversity (Indonesia's national motto)
biar, to let, permit, so that, although. **biar bagaimana juga**, be that as it may. **biarlah**, never mind. **biar pun begitu**, nevertheless. **membiarkan**, to let, permit, allow, not object.
bias, **biasan**, reflection, extension fragment
biasa, usual, common, accustomed, used to. **biasanya**, usually, customarily. **kebiasaan**, habit, custom, usage. **terbiasa**, accustomed
biaya, money, expense
bibi, aunt
bibir, lip(s)
bibit, seed
bicara, **berbicara**, to speak, talk. **berbicara di luar kepala**, to speak off the top of o's head, spontaneously. **membicarakan**, to discuss, talk about. **pembicara**, speaker. **pembicaraan**, speech, conversion
bidang, spacious, field, area
biduk, small fishing boat, boats used as floating market
bijaksana, wise, astute, prudent, tactful. **kebijaksanaan**, wisdom, insight.
bikin, **membikin**, to make
bila, when, whenever, if
bilah, classifier for long flat objects such as planks, or things shaped like knives or swords
bilang, to say. **membilang**, to say
bimbang, to hestitate. **berbimbang-bimbang**, to hestitate
bina, **membina**, to develop. **pembina**, developer, founder. **pembinaan**, developing, development, evolution
binatang, animal. **kebinatangan**, bestiality, brutality
bincang, **berbincang-bincang**, to converse, discuss
bingung, bewildered, confused. **kebingungan**, confusion, bewilderment
bini, wife
bintang, star
bintik, dot, speck. **bintik hujan**, raindrops
bir, beer
biru, blue, **membiru**, to turn blue
bis, bus
bisa, to be able, can
bisik, **bisikan**, whisper. **bisikan jiwanya**, inner feelings. **membisik**, to whisper.

membisikkan, to whisper s.t.

bisu, mute, dumb. **membisu**, to be dumb, speechless, silent, to act as a mute

bivak, hut, bivouac

bodoh, stupid, dull, foolish. **kebodohan**, stupidity

bohong, membohong, to lie, tell lies. **membohongi**, to lie to s.o. **pembohong**, liar

bola, ball, football

boleh, may, to be allowed, permitted to, can, able. **membolehkan**, to permit, allow. **memperbolehkan**, to permit, allow

bolos, to play truant, desert

bongkar, membongkar, to unload, unpack. **membongkar-bongkar**, to empty out, unload

bosan, bored, fed up, sick and tired. **membosankan**, boring, to bore. **tak bosan-bosannya**, never get bored with

buah, fruit, classifier for inanimate objects. **buah dada**, (female) breasts. **buah fikiran**, ideas, thoughts. **buah khuldi**, the eternal fruit. i.e. Muslim expression for the apple eaten by Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden

buai, berbuai, to swing. **buaian**, cradle. **membuaikan**, to swing or rock s.o.

buang, membuang, to throw away, discard

buat, for. **berbuat**, to do, behave. **buatan**, make, made in. **membuat**, to do, make. **membuatkan**, to do, make s.t. for s.o. **memperbuat**, to make, build, do. **pembuat**, maker, instrument used to make s.t. **pembuatan**, the making, manufacture. **perbuatan**, behaviour, conduct, action, deed. **terbuat**, made of

budak, slave. **memperbudak**, to treat (s.o.) like a slave

budaya, kebudayaan, culture

budi, virtue. **budiman**, virtuous, wise, prudent

bujuk, flattery, coaxing. **bujukan-bujukan**, gentle words of coaxing. **membujuk**, to persuade, coax, cajole

buka, membuka, to open. **pembuka**, s.o. or s.t. that opens (s.t.) opener

bukan, no, not, rhetorical question marker. **bukan main**, extraordinary

bukit, hill. **perbukitan**, a group of hills

bukti, proof, evidence. **membuktikan**, to prove, demonstrate s.t. **terbukti**, proved

buku, book, joint, knot

bulan, month. **sebulan** a/per month

bule, white person

bumbu, spice(s)

bumi, earth

Bunda, mother

bundar, round

bunga, flower. **bunga mawar**, rose. **membungai**, to adorn, decorate with flowers

bungkus, packet, package, parcel. **membungkus**, to wrap up, package. **pembungkus**, wrapper, wrapping

bunglon, chameleon

bunting, pregnant (of animals), fully formed (of rice grains)

bunuh, membunuh, to kill, **(mem)bunuh diri**, to commit suicide, to kill o.s. **pembunuh**, murderer, assassin. **pembunuhan**, murder

bunyi, sound

bupati, regent

buru, memburu, to hunt. **pemburu**, hunter

buruh, labourer, worker
buruk, bad, rotten, ugly
burung, bird. **burung tekukur**, cuckoo, dove, wood pigeon
buseet = **buset**, bullshit
busuk, bad, rotten
butir, grain, classifier for round objects. **membutir**
butuh, need. **kebutuhan**, need, necessity. **membutuhkan**, to need

C

cabut, mencabut, to draw out
cacat, physical defect, shortcoming, imperfection
cacing, worm
cahari, pencaharian, livelihood
cahaya, light, radiance
cair, liquid, fluid. **mencair**, to become liquid, melt (of ice)
cakap, competent, efficient, capable, able, talk, language. **bercakap-cakap**, to chat, chatter, talk, **percakapan**, conversation
cakrawala, atmosphere, sky, heavens, firmament
calon, candidate
cambang, side whiskers
campur, campuran, mixture. **campur tangan**, to interfere. **bercampur**, to mix
candi, temple, shrine
cangkir, cup
cangkul, mencangkul, to hoe
cantik, beautiful, pretty. **kecantikan**, beauty
capai, tired, weary. **mencapai**, to achieve, attain, reach
capek, tired
cara, way, method, manner. **cara hidup**, lifestyle, way of life. **secara**, in a certain way or manner
caraka, envoy
cari, mencari, to search, seek, look for
carik, piece (of paper etc.)
cat, paint
catat, catatan, note. **mencatat**, to note, record, make a note of; to chalk s.t. up.
cebur, tercebur, plunged into, drawn into
cecer, tercecer, left behind
cekam, mencekam, to grip, seize; fascinating
cekatan, neat, capable, clever, skilled
celak, mascara. **mencelaki**, to darken with mascara or eye shadow
celaka, accident, unfortunate. **kecelakaan**, accident, collision, misfortune
celana, trousers. **bercelana**, to wear (a pair of) trousers
celeng, wild boar
cemara, a long hairpiece
cengkam = **cekam**
cengkeh, cloves
cepat, quick, fast. **cepat-cepat, quickly, extremely fast. mempercepat** = **mencepatkan**, to speed up s.t.
cerai, cerai-berai, dispersed, scattered. **bercerai**, to divorce, part, separate. **menceraikan** to divorce s.o.
ceramah, lecture
cerdas, intelligent. **kecerdasan**, intelligence
cerek, (ceret), kettle
cerita, (ceritera), story. **bercerita**, to tell a story, relate, narrate. **menceritakan**, to tell, relate, narrate s.t.
cermin, mirror. **memcerminkan**, to reflect
cewek, girl, girlfriend, female
cilik, little, small, young
Cina, China. **pecina(a)n**, Chinese quarter
cincin, ring

cinta, love. **cinta kasih**, love and affection
cipta, menciptakan, to create. **penciptaan**, creation. **tercipta**, created, made
ciri, identifying mark; characteristic feature
cita, printed cotton cloth, **cita-cita**, ideals
cium, bercium, to kiss. **bercium-ciuman**, to smooch, kiss e.o. **mencium**, to kiss.
coba, please, look! **mencoba**, to try. **cobaan**, trial, test, ordeal. **coba lihat**, look, see here
cocok, matching, fitting, to suit, to correspond
coklat, brown
compang-camping, in tatters, rags
condong, inclined, to set (of sun)
contoh, example, model
corak, characteristic, feature, structure
corong, microphone
cuaca, weather
cuat, mencuat, to stand out, stick up, project upwards
cuci, cucian, washing. **mencuci**, to wash. **pencuci**, washing agent, washer
cucu, grandchild
cucur, flow (n). **bercucuran**, to pour down
cukong, Chinese business shark
cukup, enough, sufficient
cukur, mencukur, to shave
cuma, only, merely. **cuma-cuma**, gratis, free, complimentary
curah, mencurahi, to pour down on. **mencurahkan**, to pour s.t. on, to expend
curang, dishonest(y), deceitful(ness). **kecurangan**, dishonesty
curi, mencuri, to steal. **mencuri-curi**, secretly; in a clandestine way. **pencuri**, thief
curiga, suspicious. **curiga-mencurigai**, to be suspicious of e.o. **kecurigaan**, mistrust, suspicion. **mencurigai**, to suspect, distrust s.o.
cuti, leave, holiday

D

dacin, a unit of weight
dada, chest, breast
dadak, mendadak, suddenly, unexpectedly
daerah, area, region, territory. **kedaerahan**, regionalism
dagang, berdagang, to trade. **pedagang**, trader
daging, meat
dahan, branch (of a tree)
dahi, forehead
dahulu, formerly, former, previously = **dulu**
daki, mendaki, hilly, steep, to climb, ascend
daku, I, my = **aku**
dalam, in, deep. **memperdalam**, to deepen s.t., to make s.t. deep. **mendalam**, profound, deep-rooted, to deepen, become deep. **pedalaman**, inland areas.
dalang, narrator and manipulator of shadow puppets in the **wayang**
dalih, excuse, subterfuge, argument
damai, peaceful
dan, and. **dan sebagainya** (dsb), and so on, etc.
danau, lake
dandan, mendandani, to attire, adorn s.o. or s.t.
dansa, berdansa, to dance in a modern, Western style
dapat, can, to be able. **kedapatan**, to be discovered/caught in the act, found out. **mendapat**, to get, obtain, procure, have, find. **mendapati**, to find out, discover. **mendapatkan**, to obtain, get, to discover, invent, to see, visit.

pendapat, opinion, view, point of view. **pendapatan**, income. **sedapat**, upon getting. **sedapat mungkin**, as well as possible, to the best of o's ability. **terdapat**, to be found
dapur, kitchen
darah, blood. **berdarah**, to bleed, to have blood, bloody. **berdarah panas**, hot-blooded, **tak berdarah** bloodless
darat, land, shore
dari, from. **dari sekarang**, from now on
darmawisata, berdarmawisata, to go on an excursion, outing
dasar, base, foundation. **berdasar(kan)**, to have (as) a basis. **mendasarkan**, to base
dasi, tie
data, fact, datum. **data-data**, data
datang, to come. **kedatangan**, arrival. **mendatangi**, to visit, pay a call. **mendatangkan**, to import, bring in s.o. or s.t., to cause, bring about
datar, flat, level, smooth. **dataran**, plain, flat level ground
daun, leaf. **daun-daunan**, foliage
daya, power, strength. **berdaya**, to have power, strength. **tak berdaya**, powerless, listless
dayung, mendayung, to row a boat, paddle
debat, berdebat, to debate, argue about. **memperdebatkan**, to argue, debate s.t.
debu, dust. **berdebu**, dusty
dekap, mendekap, to embrace, hug
dekat, close, near, **berdekatan**, to be close, near to e.o. **memperdekat(kan)**, to bring closer. **mendekatkan**, to bring closer
delegasi, delegation
delima, pomegranate
delman, horse drawn vehicle (Jakarta)
dembam, berdembam-dembam, to bang, thud
demi, by, when, for the sake of
demikian, thus
demokrasi, democracy. **pendemokrasian**, democratisation, the process of making s.t. democratic
demokratis, democratic
denda, fine (n). **mendenda**, to fine
dengan, with. **dengan demikian**, in this way or manner, thus. **dengan sendirinya**, naturally, automatically
dengar, kedengaran, audible, able to be heard. **mendengar**, to hear. **mendengarkan**, to listen to. **pendengar**, listener, hearer. **terdengar**, audible, able to be heard
dengus, mendengus-dengus, to snort, hiss
depan, front, in front, next, coming
derap, to tramp, tramping
deras, fast, quick
derita, suffering, hardship. **menderita**, to suffer. **menderita semutan**, to go to sleep (of arm or leg). **penderitaan**, suffering
derma, alms. **dermawan**, charitable, philanthropic
deru, menderu, to pound, roar
desa, village. **pedesaan**, villages, village areas
desak, mendesak, to urge, insist, press, to push aside
desar, berdesar, to rustle, to sizzle. **mendesar-desarkan**, to rustle (of leaves)
detak, beat, throb, thud
detar, berdetar-detar, the clatter of footsteps on a wooden floor
detik, second (n)
detuk, berdetuk-detuk, the sound of a paddle knocking against the side of a boat

dewasa, adult, grown up, time. **dewasa ini**, nowadays, these days
di, in, at, on
dia, he, she
diam, quiet, silent, taciturn; to live, stay. **berdiam**, to be silent, remain silent, to live. **kediaman**, residence. **pendiam**, a silent person
didih, mendidih, to boil
didik, mendidik, to educate, bring up. **pendidik**, educator. **pendidikan**, education
dinding, wall. **berdinding(kan) bambu**, to have bamboo walls
dingin, cold. **kedinginan**, to feel cold, be chilled, freezing
diri, self, oneself. **diri sendiri**, oneself. **berdiri**, to stand, get up, rise. **berpendirian**, to have a standpoint, point of view. **mendirikan**, to found, establish. **terdiri dari**, to consist of
doa, prayer. **berdoa**, to pray
dokter, doctor
dongeng, story. **mendongengkan**, to narrate, relate
dongkol, irritated
dorong, mendorong, to push, urge
dosa, sin, crime
dua, two. **berdua**, both. **kedua**, second. **keduanya**, the two of them
dubang, spittle
duduk, to sit. **duduk berjuntai**, to sit on chairs, steps etc. with legs down, as opposed to sitting cross legged on the floor. **berpenduduk** to have a population. **kedudukan**, situation, position. **penduduk**, inhabitant, occupant, resident
duga, dugaan, guess, assumption, suspicion. **menduga-duga**, to guess, suspect
duka, grief, sorrow. **berdukacita**, to mourn, grieve
dukun, practitioner of traditional medicine
dulu, formerly, former, previous(ly), first, before, for the time being. **duluan**, first, prior = **dahulu**
dungu, stupid, retarded
dunia, world, earth
durhaka, sinful, rebellious
durian, a kind of fruit
dusta, lie, falsehood. **pendusta**, liar
duyun, berduyun-duyun, to throng, flock, crowd

E

edar, beredar, to turn, revolve, to circulate
efek, effect. **efek sampingan**, side effects
ejek, mengejek, to mock, tease, to scorn, to ridicule
ekor, tail, classifier used for animals
elak, mengelakkan, to evade, dodge, avoid
elevator, elevator
emak, mother
emas, gold
embun, dew
emosi, emotion
empat, four. **perempat**, quarter
empu jari, thumb
enak, delicious, pleasant, content
enggan, to dislike, have an objection
entah(lah), goodness knows, who knows
enyah, to go away, flee. **Enyahlah!**, Go away!
erti, dimengerti, to be understood. **mengerti**, to understand. **pengertian**, meaning, understanding, comprehension
esok, tomorrow. **esoknya**, the morrow. **esokpaginya**, the following morning, next morning

F

faham, memfahami, to understand = **paham**
fakultas, faculty
famili, family
fasih, fluent
fasilitas, facility
Februari, February
fikir, fikiran, though = **pikir**
filsuf, philosopher
firdaus, paradise
formulasi, formulation
foto, photograph. **foto-toestel**, camera (Dutch)
fungsi, function. **berfungsi**, to function

G

gadis, girl, maiden
gagah, brave, strong, sturdy, well built, dashing
gagal, to fail
gaib, mysterious, magical
gairah, kegairahan, urge, enthusiasm. **menggairahkan**, to stir, enrapture, arouse, emotionally moving
gaji, pay, salary, wages
galah, pole, punting pole
galak, fierce, wild. **menggalakkan**, to stir up, incite, promote
gali, menggali, to dig, unearth. **menggali-gali**, to scavenge. **penggali**, digger, spade, instrument used for digging
gambar, picture, **gambaran**, picture, visualisation, description. **menggambarkan**, to describe s.t.
gamelan, Javanese orchestra
gampang, easy, easily
ganas, savage, fierce. **keganasan**, cruelty, ferocity
ganda, double, multiple
ganggu, mengganggu, to disturb, bother, annoy. **terganggu**, impaired, defective, marred
ganja, marijuana, hashish
ganti, substitute, replacement. **berganti**, to change, replace. **berganti-ganti**, to take turns. **mengganti**, to change. **menggantikan**, to change, replace. **pengganti**, substitute, replacement, successor
gantung, bergantung(an), to hang, be suspended. **gantungan**, hook, hanger. **menggantungkan**, to hang s.t. on s.t. **tergantung**, hanging
garam, salt
garang, fierce, aggressive
garderobe, cloakroom (Dutch)
garis, line. **bergaris-bawah**, to be underlined
gatal, itchy, itching. **menggatal**, to make itch, irritating. **menggatal di ujung lidah**, to set tongues wagging
gaul, bergaul, to mix socially, associate with. **pergaulan**, association, society, (social) intercourse
gaya, style, manner
gedung, building
gegap, gegap-gempita, in tumult, in turmoil
gelagat, behaviour
gelang, bracelet, anklet
gelap, dark, dim, not clear. **gelap-gulita**, pitch dark
gelar, degree
gelas, glass
geleng, menggeleng-geleng, to shake o's head
geletak, bergeletakan, scattered, (used of corpses, bodies). **menggeletak**, to sprawl (used of corpses, bodies)
geli, amused
gelombang, wave
gelora, bergelora, to seethe, rage
gelut, menggelut, to play, wrestle,

to seize
gemas, indignant, annoyed
gembala, herdboy, shepherd
gembira, happy, joyful, joyous, rejoicing. **kegembiraan**, joy, happiness. **menggembirakan**, to make glad, gratifying
gementar, to shake, tremble
gemuk, plump, fat
genang, menggenang, liquid lying in pools
genap, full, exact, complete. **segenap**, every, whole, all
genteng, tile
gerak, gerak-gerik, mannerism, movements. **bergerak**, to move, be in motion. **gerakan**, movement. **menggerakkan**, to move
gerangan, can it be (wondering, expressing doubt, puzzlement, uncertainty)
gereja, church
gerilya, guerilla
gerobak, cart, wagon
gerogot, menggerogoti, to erode, eat away, devour
gerongga (geronggang), hollow, vacuum
gersang, barren
gesa, tergesa-gesa, hurriedly
geser, menggeserkan, to move, shift s.t.
getah, latex
getar, bergetar, to shimmer, tremble, shake, shiver
gigi, tooth, teeth
gila, mad, crazy, insane
giling, menggiling, to mill, grind. **penggilingan**, mill
gin, gin
giring, menggiring, to escort (of criminals), to lead away
goblok, stupid
golong, golongan, group, classification. **tergolong**, classified, belong to
goreng, fried. **penggoreng**, s.o. who fries or s.t. to fry with
gosok, penggosok, abrasive (n), s.t. to scratch or rub with
gotong-royong, mutual co-operation
goyang, menggoyang-goyang, to shake
gratis, free, complimentary
gubuk, hovel
gugup, nervous, panicky, excited
gugur, to fall (of leaves), to fall in battle. **berguguran**, to fall
gula, sugar. **gula aren**, palm sugar. **gula pasir**, castor sugar, granulated sugar
guling, menggulingkan, to overthrow, smash
gulung, menggulung-gulung, to roll, to roll up
gumpal, clot, clump. **bergumpal-gumpal**, in heaps, in clumps
guna, use, advantage, benefit, good deed, kindness, function. **berguna**, to be useful, beneficial. **mempergunakan** = **menggunakan**, to use, make use of, utilise, operate. **penggunaan**, use, usage
gunung, mountain. **menggunung**, to become mountain-like in size, appearance etc. **pe(r)gunungan**, mountain range
gurat, bergurat-gurat, lined, full of scratches
guru, teacher

H

ha, eh!
habis, finished, completely, entirely. **kehabisan**, to be out of, have no more left
hadap, front. **berhadapan**, to face, to be faced with. **hadapan**, front. **menghadapi**, to face, confront. **terhadap**, to, with, for, towards, about

hadiah, present (n)
hadir, to be present, attend. **hadirin**, audience. **menghadiri**, to attend
haji, s.o. who has made the pilgrimage to Mecca
hak, right(s)
hakiki, true, real
hal, thing, matter, affair, concern, business. **hal yang tidak-tidak**, unimaginable thing(s), nonsensical thing
halaman, yard, page
halang, menghalang, to prevent, dissuade
halilintar, thunderbolt
halus, sensitive, refined, fine
hampir, almost. **menghampir**, to approach
handuk, towel
hangat, hot. **menghangatkan**, to heat, make hot
hanya, only, just
harap, please. **berharap**, to hope. **harapan**, hope. **mengharapkan**, to hope for, expect
harga, price, value. **harga-menghargai**, mutual respect. **berharga**, valuable, precious. **menghargai**, to honour, to be appreciative of, to appreciate s.o. **menghargakan**, to appreciate, esteem. **penghargaan**, honour, respect, appreciation
hari, day. **hari ini**, today. **hari lahir**, birthday. **hari libur**, holidays, days off. **hari ulang tahun**, birthday, anniversary. **harian**, daily newspaper. **sehari-hari**, daily, every day, day to day, all day long. **sehari-semalam**, 24 hours a day, (all) day and (all) night
harimau, tiger
harta, wealth, property. **hartawan**, wealthy person
harum, fragrance
harus, must, to have to, be forced to, compelled to. **keharusan**, obligation, necessity. **mengharuskan**, to compel, require. **seharusnya**, should, ought, proper
hasil, result, product. **hasil bumi**, natural products. **berhasil**, to succeed, be successful. **penghasilan**, income, production
hasrat, desire, longing
hati, heart, innermost being. **hati-hati**, carefully, cautiously, intently. **hati(ku) tegang** (I am) keyed-up. **berhati halus**, to be sensitive, easily offended. **berhati-hati**, to be careful. **memperhatikan**, to observe carefully, note, pay attention to. **perhatian**, attention, attentiveness, interest
hatinurani, conscience, heart of hearts
hawa, air, climate, weather
hayat, life. **menghayati**, to live by (a principle etc.)
hebat, violent, enthusiastic, exciting, terrific
helai, classifier for flat, thin objects
helikopter, helicopter
hempang, (empang), menghempang, to block
hempas, (empas), menghempaskan, to throw, fling, to slam (a door)
hendak, to want, wish, desire. **hendaknya**, it is desirable. **kehendak**, wish, desire (n). **menghendaki**, to desire. **(berbuat) sehendaknya**, to do as one pleases, to o's hearts content.
henti, berhenti, to stop, halt. **memberhentikan**, to dismiss, discharge, fire = **memperhentikan, menghentikan**, to stop. **pemberhentian**, dismissal. **penghentian**, the

giving up. **perhentian** stopping place. **tak henti-hentinya,** ceaselessly, endlessly
heran, surprised, amazed, astonished. **keheranan,** surprise, astonishment. **mengherankan,** amazing. **terheran-heran,** astonished, amazed
hias, berhias, to adorn, decorate, dress up, make attractive. **berhiaskan,** adorned, decorated with. **menghiasi,** to adorn, decorate. **perhiasan,** decoration, adornment, jewellery
hiba (iba), terhiba-hiba, piteously, emotionally
hibur, menghibur, to cheer up, comfort, to entertain
hidang, menghidangkan, to serve, present
hidung, nose
hidup, life, to live. **kehidupan,** life. **penghidupan,** living, livelihood, income
hijau, green. **kehijauan,** green(ish)
hilang, to lose, disappear, lost. **kehilangan,** to lose, loss, disappearance. **menghilang,** to disappear, vanish, to become lost. **menghilangkan,** to get rid of
hilir, menghilir, to go downstream
himpun, menghimpunkan, to gather, assemble
hina, menghina, to insult. **penghinaan,** insult, humiliation
hindar, menghindar, to move aside. **menghindarkan,** to prevent, avoid, evade s.t.
hingga, until, up to. **sehingga,** so that, with the result that, to the extent that
hinggap, to perch
hirau, menghiraukan, to pay attention to, notice, heed
hiruk, hiruk-piruk, racket, uproar
hitam, black
hitung, berhitung, to count. **memperhitungkan,** to take into consideration, weigh up. **perhitungan,** calculations
hormat, honour, respect. **kehormatan,** honour. **menghormati,** to honour, respect. **terhormat,** respected, honoured, honourable, venerable
hotel, hotel
hubung, berhubung, connected, related, due to the fact. **berhubungan (dengan)** in connection (with). **hubungan,** connection, relationship, relation. **menghubungi,** to get in touch with, contact. **menghubungkan,** to connect. **penghubung,** connector. **perhubungan,** connection
hujan, rain. **hujan lebat,** to rain heavily
hukum, law, verdict, commandment. **hukuman,** penalty, punishment, sentence. **menghukum,** to sentence, to punish
hulu, menghulu, to go upstream
huni, penghuni, inhabitant
huse, hurrah!
hutan, forest, jungle

I

ia, he, she. **ialah,** is, are
Ibrahim, Abraham
ibu, mother, **Ibu,** madam, Mrs, you, your. **ibukota,** capital city
idam, idaman, wish, desire, dream, ideal. **mengidam(idam)kan,** to crave, long for
ide, idea
ijo, green = **hijau**
ijuk, black sugar-palm fibre
ikan, fish
ikat, string, band, bunch. **ikat kepala,** head cloth. **ikat**

pinggang, belt. **mengikat**, to tie, fasten. **mengikatkan**, to tie with. **pengikat**, binding agent, thing used for tying. **terikat**, restricted, bound

iklan, advertisement

ikut, to join in, participate. **ikut campur**, to interfere. **berikut**, to follow, following. **mengikuti**, to follow, to take (a course)

imajinasi, imagination

iman, faith, belief

imbang, balanced. **seimbang**, equal, balanced, commensurate

imij, image

inap, menginap, to lodge, stay overnight. **penginapan**, lodging, accommodation

indah, beautiful. **keindahan**, beauty

informasi, information

ingat, to remember, recall. **ingatan**, memory, idea. **mengingat-ingat**, to remember, recall. **mengingatkan**, to warn, remind, **seingat saya**, as far as I remember

Ingg(e)ris, English, England

ingin, to want, wish, desire. **keinginan**, wish, want, desire

ini, this

injak, menginjak(-injak), to tread, trample on

insaf, notion, realisation. **menginsafkan**, to convince, to make s.o. realise

inspektur, inspector

interogasi, interrogation, (to be asked) questions

inti, core, essence

intuisi, intuition

invalid, invalid (n)

ipar, brother- or sister-in-law

iring, beriring, in procession, successive, consecutive

iris, mengiris, to slice, to cut

isap, mengisap, to suck, inhale, to smoke

isi, contents. **isi hati**, feelings, s.t. on o's mind. **berisi(kan)**, to contain, containing. **mengisi**, to fill

ist(e)ri, wife. **beristri(kan)**, to marry, be married (of a man). **memperistri**, to marry, take a wife. **memperistrikan**, to marry off (a son)

istilah, (technical) term

istirahat, rest, break. **beristirahat**, to rest, have a siesta, take a break

itu, that, the

izin (ijin), permit, permission. **izin cuti**, official, approved leave. **mengizinkan**, to allow s.t.

J

jabat, pejabat, official, functionary

jadi, so, therefore. **jadinya**, so, consequently. **kejadian**, event, happening, incident. **menjadi**, to become. **menjadikan**, to make. **terjadi**, to happen

jaga, menjaga, to guard, mind, watch over, take care of

jago, cock, rooster

jagung, corn, maize

jahat, bad, evil, wicket. **kejahatan**, crime, badness. **penjahat**, criminal

jahit, jahit-menjahit, needlework, anything to do with sewing. **menjahit**, to sew. **penjahit**, tailor, sewing needle

jajah, jajahan, colonial rule. **menjajah**, to colonise. **penjajah**, coloniser, oppressor

jalan, street, road, to walk. **jalan raya**, main road. **berjalan**, to walk. **menjalani**, to endure, undergo, cover (of distance) **menjalankan**, to drive, to make go, to carry out, do, undertake

jalin, menjalin, to draw together, connect, plait

jalur, stripe, line. **menjaluri**, to stream down
jam, hour, watch. **berjam-jam**, for hours
jaman, time, era, age = **zaman**
jambang, jug, vase, pot
jamin, menjamin, to assure, guarantee. **penjamin**, guarantor. **terjamin**, ensured, guaranteed, secured, assured
jamu, menjamu, to entertain, to act as host
janda, divorcee, widow(er)
jangan, don't! (imperative). **jangan sekali-kali**! never-ever
jangkau, jangkauan, reach. **menjangkau**, to reach out
jangkung, gaunt, lanky
janji, promise. **berjanji**, to promise
jantan, male (usually of animals)
jantung, heart
jarak, distance
jarang, rarely, seldom, wide apart, thin, sparse
jari, finger, toe. **jari telunjuk**, index finger. **jari tengah**, middle finger
jarum, needle. **jarum suntikan**, vaccination needle, injection, inoculation
jas, coat, jacket. **jas hujan**, raincoat
jasa, service
jatuh, to fall. **terjatuh**, to slip, fall, accidently
jauh, far, distant, distance. **jauh malam**, far into the night. **berjauhan**, to be far apart. **kejauhan**, distance. **menjauhi**, to avoid
Jawa, Java
jawab, answer. **jawaban**, answer. **menjawab**, to answer
jawatan, department, government office
jebak, terjebak, fallen into
jejak, footstep, footprint, track
jejal, berjejal-jejal, to crowd, throng
jelaga, soot
jelalah, menjelajah, to explore, to cross
jelang, menjelang, toward, approaching
jelas, clear. **menjelaskan**, to make clear, to explain
jelma, incarnation. **menjelma**, to transform o.s., take on (another) form. **menjelmakan**, to transform s.t. **penjelmaan**, transformation
jembatan, bridge. **jembatan gantung**, suspension bridge
jemput, menjemput, to meet s.o., to pick s.o. up, to fetch
jemu, to be bored, sick of s.t. or s.o., to be fed up. **kejemuan**, boredom. **menjemukan**, boring. **tak jemu-jemunya**, tirelessly
jenasah, body, corpse = **jenazah**
jendela, window
jenguk, menjenguk, to visit
jenis, kind, type, sort. **kejenisan**, sex (gender)
jenjang, steps, ladder
jera, to be afraid, discouraged. **tak jera-jeranya**, to dare to do s.t.
jerang, menjerangkan, to heat, place s.t. on the fire, to boil (water). **terjerang**, placed on the fire
jernih, clear, pure
jeruk, citrus fruit
jika, when, if
jingga, orange (colour). **kejinggaan**, to turn yellow
jinjing, menjinjing, to carry s.t. light dangling in o's hand
jiwa, soul, spirit, mind
jodoh, marriage partner, match
joget, dance, dancing girls, troupe of dancing girls. **menjoget**, to dance
jongkok, berjongkok, to squat, kneel
jua, nothing but, nobody but,

emphatic particle
juadah, delicacy made of rice
jual, menjual, to sell
juang, berjuang, to fight, struggle. **memperjuangkan**, to struggle for, fight for. **perjuangan**, struggle
judi, berjudi, to gamble
judul, title, caption
juga, also, too, as well, (all) the same, anyway, rather, quite
jujur, honest
julang, menjulang, to soar
jumlah, amount, quantity, number, total
jumpa, menjumpai, to meet with
juran, (joran), fishing rod
juru, expert, trained worker. **juru rawat**, nurse. **juru tulis** clerk
jurus, straight. **jurusan**, direction. **menjurus**, to focus, aim for
juta, million. **jutaan**, millions. **jutawan**, millionaire

K

kabar, news. **mengabarkan**, to inform, report
kabel, cable
kaca, glass, mirror. **kacamata**, glasses, spectacles
kacang, peanut, pea, bean
kadal, lizard
kadaluwarsa (kedaluwarsa) out of date
kadang-kadang, sometimes, occasionally
kado, present, gift
kaget, astonished, amazed, taken aback
kagum, astonished, amazed. **kekaguman**, admiration, astonishment. **mengagumi**, to admire
-kah, question particle
kail, fish hook. **pengail**, angler, fisherman
kain, length of cloth, sarong. **kain panjang**, batik piece. **kain pelekat**, a type of sarong, (to pray in)
kaing, terkaing-kaing, cried out, squealed
kaji, knowledge. **mengaji**, to read or recite the Qur'an, study s.t.
kakak, older brother or sister. **kakak angkat**, adopted brother or sister
kakek, grandfather
kaki, leg, foot. **berkaki kayu**, to have a wooden leg
kaku, awkward, clumsy, stiff and unbending
kalah, to lose, be defeated, beaten. **kekalahan**, defeat. **mengalahkan**, to defeat
kalang, kalangan, circle. **kalangan rakyat**, community
kalau, if, when. **kalau-kalau**, lest, in case, maybe, otherwise. **kalau pun**, even if
kali, time, occasion. **kali ini**, this time. **berkali-kali**, time and time again, many times. **sekali**, once, one time, very, extremely. **sekalian**, at once, at the same time, all. **sekaligus**, at the same time, all at once. **sekali lagi**, once more, again, one more time. **sekalipun**, even though. **sekali-sekali**, occasionally. **sesekali**, from time to time
kaleng, tin, can
kalimat, sentence. **kalimat tanya**, question
kamar, room. **kamar kerja**, study, den. **kamar mandi**, bathroom
kambing, goat. **kambing bandot**, billy goat
kami, we, us, our (exclusive)
kampung, village. **perkampungan**, villages
Kamis, Thursday
kampus, campus

kamu, you, your. **kamu sekalian**, all of you
kamus, dictionary
kan, abbreviation of **akan**, abbreviation of **bukan**
kanak-kanak, (small) child. **kekanak-kanakan**, childish
kanan, right
kandang, pen, stable, shed
kandung, mengandung, to contain, pregnant
kang, form of address used by a wife to a husband = **kakang**
kangen, to long for
kanguru, kangaroo
kanpas, canvas
kantor, office
kantuk, sleepiness, drowsiness. **mengantuk**, to be sleepy
kaos, sock, stocking = **kaus**
kapal, ship, boat. **kapal terbang** = **kapal udara**, aeroplane
kapan, when
kapas, cotton wool
kapela, chapel
kapir (kafir), infidel, pagan
kapten, captain
karang, karang-mengarang, the art of composition, all about composition. **karangan**, composition, piece of writing. **mengarang**, to write, compose. **pengarang**, writer, author
karcis, ticket
karena, because
karet, rubber
kartu, card
karung, sack
karya, work. **karya yang berseni**, a work of art. **karyawan**, worker, employee. **karyawati**, female employee
kasar, coarse, rough, rude
kasih, kasih sayang, deep love, affection. **berkasih-kasihan**, to be loving towards e.o. **kasihan**, to pity, feel sorry for, poor thing. . .! poor. . .! **mengasihani**, to pity. **pengasih**, altruistic person, the loving (God)
kassa, cashier
kata, word. **kata dasar**, root. **kata ganti**, pronoun. **kata kerja**, verb. **kata panggilan**, term of address. **kata penghubung**, conjunction. **berkata**, to say. **mengatakan**, to say, tell. **perkataan**, word, expression
kaum, group, class. **kaum buruh**, the workers, the proletariat. **kaum ibu**, womenfolk. **kaum muda**, the younger generation
kaus, kaus kaki, socks = **kaos**
kawal, pengawal, guard, sentry, watchman. **pengawal pribadi**, body guard
kawan, friend, companion
kawin, to marry, to be married. **kawin paksa**, forced marriage. **mengawini**, to marry. **mengawinkan**, to marry off (a son or daughter). **perkawinan**, marriage
kaya, rich, wealthy. **kaya-raya**, really rich. **kekayaan**, wealth, riches. **memperkaya**, to enrich, enriching.
kayu, wood, wooden. **kayu jati**, teak. **kayu topang**, crutches. **kayu-kayuan**, various kinds of wood
ke, to, towards. **kepada**, to, towards (s.o.)
kebaya, women's blouse reaching below the waist
kebun, garden, plantation. **berkebun**, to garden, cultivate, to work in a garden or a plantation. **perkebunan**, plantation, cultivation
kecewa, disappointed. **kekecewaan**, disappointment. **mengecewakan**, to disappoint, disappointing

kecil, little, small. **mengecil**, to grow small(er), to become little. **mengecilkan**, to belittle, minimise, underestimate
kecuali, except, except for
kedar, sekedar, just, sufficient = **sekadar**
kejam, cruel, harsh, merciless
kejap, wink (of the eye). **sekejap**, in a wink, in a second
kejar, berkejar-kejaran, to chase e.o. **mengejar**, to chase, pursue.
keju, cheese
kejut, frightened, scared, fright. **mengejutkan**, to frighten, worry. **terkejut**, startled, shocked, amazed
kelahi, berkelahi, to quarrel, fight
kelapa, coconut
kelas, class (room)
kelenong (keleneng) berkelenong, to clang, ring, toll
keliar, berkeliaran, to run wild, roam about, at large, on the loose
keliling, around, circumference. **berkeliling**, to go around. **mengelilingi**, to surround. **sekeliling**, around, surrounding area
kelok, berkelok-kelok, winding. **mengelok**, to turn
kelompok, group, cluster
keluar, to go out, come out of, to leave. **mengeluarkan**, to express, to take out. **pengeluaran**, expenditure
keluarga, family
keluh, mengeluh, to sigh, moan, complain
kemarau, dry (of season), the dry season
kemarin, yesterday
kembali, to return, come back, again
kembang, flower. **berkembang**, developing.**berkembangan**, to bloom, flower, blossom. **mengembangkan**, to develop, expand. **pengembangan**, development, expansion
kembar, twins
kembara, mengembara, to wander, roam
kemeja, shirt
kemilau, shining, glistening
kempis, mengempis, to become deflated, to go down (of a balloon)
kemudi, mengemudikan, to steer, drive. **pengemudi**, driver, helmsman
kemudian, then, later
kena, to be the target or victim of, to be struck or hit by. **mengenai**, about, concerning, with respect to
kenal, to know, be conversant or familiar with, **berkenalan**, to know e.o., to be acquaintances. **memperkenalkan**, to introduce s.o. or s.t. **mengenal**, to know, recognise. **perkenalan**, acquaintance, introduction. **terkenal**, well known, famous
kenan, memperkenankan, to permit, allow
kenang, (kenang-)kenangan, souvenir, reminiscence(s). **terkenang**, recalled, remembered
kenapa, why
kencang, fast, violent, taut
kencing, to urinate
kendara, kendaraan, vehicle, transport
kening, forehead, brow
kenop, button, switch
kepala, head. **kepala desa**, village headman. **kepala sekolah**, headmaster, headmistress
keping, chip, splinter, fragment, piece. **berkeping-keping**, to be in pieces, fragments
kepingin, to long for

keplok, keplok tangan, to applaud
kepul, berkepul(-kepul) to billow, eddy. **mengepul(-ngepul)**, to billow
kepundan, crater, lava
kerabat, relative, family
kerah, mengerahkan, to summon, call up. **mengerahkan tenaga**, to do o's utmost
kerap, often
keras, hard, strong, harsh. **memperkeras = mengeraskan**, to strengthen
kerasan, to feel at home, settled in
kerat, keratan, piece, section. **mengerat-ngerat**, to cut into pieces
kerbau, buffalo
kerdil, stunted, dwarfish
keren, striking, handsome
keret, mengkeret, to shrink
kereta, carriage. **keretaapi**, train
kerik, a folk treatment for headaches and chills which consists of scraping the back of the neck with a coin until the skin is inflamed. **mengeriki**, to do **kerik**, for s.o.
kerikil, gravel, pebble
kering, dry, arid. **berkeringan**, to dry up
keringat, sweat, perspiration
k(e)ris, a dagger with a wavy blade
kerja, work, occupation, job. **bekerja**, to work. **bekerja sambilan**, to work part time, to have a job as a sideline. **mengerjakan**, to do, carry out, execute. **pekerja**, worker. **pekerjaan**, work, job. **pekerjaan rumah**, homework
kerling, kerlingan (mata), glance (of the eye), side long glance
kerongkongan, throat
keropok, (keropong), hollow, rotting
kertas, paper
keruan, certain. **tak keruan**, indistinct, to make no sense
kerubung, (kerumum), mengerubungi, to crowd
kerunyut, berkerunyut (berkerenyut), to wrinkle, to have wrinkles, to be wrinkled
kerut, berkerut, furrowed, wrinkled
kesal, frustrated, annoyed
kesan, impression, trance
ketat, tight(ly)
ketawa, to laugh
ketik, ketik mengetik, anything to do with typing. **mengetik**, to type
ketika, when
ketua, chairman
khas, typical, special, exclusive
khawatir, anxious, worried
khianat, mengkhianati, to betray. **pengkhianat**, traitor. **pengkhianatan**, betrayal
kiai (kiyahi), Muslim teacher, scholar (in Java)
kian, kesekian, the nth. **kesekian kalinya**, the nth time. **sekian**, such and such a . . .
kias, kiasan, symbol, metaphor
kibar, berkibar, to wave, flutter (of flag)
kikir, stingy, tightfisted
kikis, mengikis, to erode, score
kilat, gleam, lustre. **mengkilat**, to shine, gleam
kini, now
kira, to think, feel. **kira-kira**, approximately, roughly, about, possibly, probably. **kiranya**, probably, it seems that
kiraan, estimate. **mengira**, to think, to guess
kiri, left
kirim, berkirim-kiriman, to write to e.o., to correspond. **kiriman**, s.t. sent, package, present. **mengirim**, to send. **mengirimkan**, to send s.t. **pengirim**, sender
kisah, story. **mengisahkan**, to relate.

tell, write stories about
kisar, berkisar, to revolve, turn
kita, we, our, us (inclusive)
kitar, mengitari, to surround, to revolve, circle. **sekitar**, around
kleptomaniak, kleptomaniac
kobar, berkobar, to blare, exuberant
kokok, berkokok, to crow
kolam, pond, pool. **kolam renang**, swimming pool
kolong, the space under a house, a bed etc.
kolot, conservative. **kekolotan**, conservatism
kombinasi, combination
komputer, computer
komuni, communion
kongres, congress, convention
konkrit, concrete, precise
konsultasi, berkonsultasi, to consult, confer with
kopi, coffee. **pengopi**, coffee-addict
kopor, suitcase, luggage
koran, newspaper
korban, sacrifice, victim
kornet, corned beef in a tin
kortsluiting, short-circuit (Dutch)
kosakata, vocabulary
kosong, empty, vacant, unoccupied. **mengosongkan**, to empty, to vacate
kota, city, town
kotak, box
kotek, berkotek, to cluck
kotor, dirty. **kotoran**, dirt, litter, rubbish
kredit, credit
krisis, crisis
Kristen, Christian
Kristus, Christ
kritik, criticism
kuas, brush
kuasa, power, authority. **berkuasa**, to hold power, to have authority, be in charge. **kekuasaan**, power. **menguasai**, to master, control. **penguasaan**, mastery
kuat, strong. **kekuatan**, strength. **menguatkan**, to strengthen, to confirm, to corroborate
kubang, berkubang, to wallow. **kubangan**, mud-hole
kubus, cube
kucing, cat
kuda, horse. **kuda pacuan**, race-horse
kue, cake
kukuh, firm, sturdy
kukus, kukusan, steamer. **mengukus**, to steam (of food)
kulai, terkulai, dropped, hanging
kuli, labourer
kuliah, lecture
kulit, skin, leather, hide. **menguliti**, to skin, to peel
kulkas, refrigerator
kumal, grimy, dishevelled
kuman, germ(s), microbe(s), bacteria
kumpul, mengumpulkan, to gather, collect. **perkumpulan**, organisation, association
kunci, lock. **berkunci**, to have a lock, be locked
kuning, yellow. **kekuning-kuningan**, yellowish. **kuningan**, brass. **menguning**, to become, turn yellow
kunjung, mengunjungi, to visit s.o. or s.t.
kunyah, mengunyah-ngunyah, to chew (up)
kupas, mengupas, to peel. **pengupasan**, analysis
kuping, ear
kupu-kupu, butterfly
kurang, less. **kekurangan**, deficiency, shortage, short coming; to lack, be short of
kursi, chair
kursus, course
kurung, cage, prison. **terkurung**, cooped up, caged

kurus, thin. **kurus-kering**, skin and bones, emaciated

kusir, driver (of horse-drawn carriage)

kutik, berkutik, to stir, move slightly

kutip, mengutip, to quote

kuyu, lifeless, faded

L

labuh, pelabuhan, harbour

laci, drawer

ladang, field. **ladang-ladang**, dry fields, unirrigated pasture or farm land

lagak, attitude, manner, behaviour

lagi, more, further, additional, another, again. **selagi**, while, during. **tak lagi**, no longer

lagu, song. **lagu kebangsaan**, national anthem

-lah, emphatic particle, imperative marker.

lahan, perlahan(-lahan), slowly, gently

lahir, external or outward form, body, outward manifestation, to be born, to come into existence. **kelahiran**, birth. **melahirkan**, to give birth, have a child, to express

lain, other, another, different, **lain kali**, another time. **lain orang**, someone else. **berlainan**, to be different from e.o. **melainkan**, but, however. **selain (dari)**, besides, apart (from)

laki, laki-laki, man, male. **berlaki**, to marry, be married (of a woman); to take a husband. **lelaki**, man, men, male

laksana, melaksanakan, to bring about, cause to materialise, to do. **pelaksanaan**, execution, carrying out

laku, kelakuan, behaviour, conduct. **melakukan**, to do, to carry out, perform. **perlakuan**, treatment, occurrence, action, act

lalang, tall weed, grass

lalat, fly

lalu, then, and, to pass, past, last. **berlalu**, to pass. **melalui**, to go or pass through, through, via, by means of. **selalu**, always. **terlalu**, too, excessively

lama, old, long (of time). **selama**, while, during, for. **selama ini**, up until now, all this time. **selama-lamanya**, forever

lamar, lamaran, proposal

lambat, late, slow. **lambat laun**, gradually, finally. **terlambat**, too late, delayed

lampau, melampaui, to go beyond, pass over

lampu, lamp, light

lancang, impudent, insolent, sharp tongued

lancar, fluent, smooth. **melancarkan**, to promote, launch. **memperlancar**, to speed up, to make run more smoothly

langgar, melanggar, to evade, to break, transgress, disobey.

pelanggaran, infraction, violation

langit, sky

langkah, step, stride, approach. **melangkahkan**, to take a step, walk

langsep, (langsat) a small oval fruit, yellowish-green in colour

langsung, straightaway, direct(ly). **berlangsung**, to take place. **melangsungkan**, to perform, carry out

lanjut, advanced, long, detailed.

melanjutkan, to continue.

selanjutnya, from now on, furthermore

lantai, floor. **berlantai(kan) papan**, to have a plank floor

lantas, then, right away, straight away

lapang, **lapang hati**, open, tolerant. **lapangan**, field, square, park. **lapangan terbang**, airport
lapar, hungry. **kelaparan**, hunger, to be starving
lapis, **lapisan**, layer, strata, level
lapor, **laporan**, report
larang, **larangan**, prohibition. **melarang**, to forbid, prohibit. **terlarang**, forbidden, prohibited
lari, to run. **berlari(-lari)**, to run, trot. **berlarian**, to run in all directions. **melarikan**, to run off with, away with. **melarikan diri**, to escape, flee
larut, late, advanced, dragging on, endless
latih, **berlatih**, to practise. **latihan**, practice, exercise. **melatih**, to train. **terlatih**, trained, practised
laut, sea, ocean
lawan, **berlawanan**, to be in conflict. **melawan**, to oppose, to be against, contrary to
layak, **selayak**, like, as, proper(ly)
layan, **melayani**, to serve, wait on. **pelayan**, waiter, waitress, attendant. **pelayanan**, service
layang, **melayang**, lofty, soar, float in the air. **melayang-layang**, to hover
layar, **pelayar**, sailor, seaman
layu, withered, wilted, weak
lazim, usual, general(ly)
lebah, bee
lebar, **melebar**, to widen, become broader
lebat, dense, packed, thick, heavy (of rain)
lebih, more. **lebih baik**, its better that, you'd better. **lebih lanjut**, more, further, continued. **lebih-lebih**, especially. **berlebih-lebihan**, exaggerated, excessive. **melebih-lebihkan**, to exaggerate, overdo. **terlebih dahulu**, first of all
lecut, **melecut**, to whip, flog
lega, relaxed
leher, neck
lekas, fast, quick
lekat, **melekatkan**, to put on, wear
lelah, tired, exhausted, weary
lelaki, male
lelakon, scenario
leluhur, ancestors
lemah, weak, soft, delicate. **lemah-lembut**, gentle, gently
lemak, fat, grease, lard, greasy
lemari, cupboard
lembaga, institution
lembah, valley
lembar, page, classifier for hair, paper, threads
lembing, javelin
lembu, cow
lembut, soft(ly), gentle
lempar, **melempar**, to throw, toss, cast
lengah, dawdling, inattentive
lengan, arm
lengkap, full, complete, equipped. **melengkapkan**, to equip with. **perlengkapan**, equipment
lengket, to cling, stick
lenyap, gone, vanished. **melenyapkan**, to wipe out, eliminate
lepas, free, loose. **melepas**, to discharge, to see s.o. off. **melepaskan**, to release, free, to get rid of
lereng, slope
lesu, despondent, weak, apathetic
letak, location, place, to be located. **meletakkan**, to put, place, position. **terletak**, to be situated, located
lewat, past, via, by way of, very exceedingly. **kelewat**, very, exceeding. **kelewat larut**, to drag on endlessly. **melewati**, to pass over, surpass
liar, wild (see **keliar**)

libat, terlibat, involved
libur, berlibur, to have a holiday
licin, slippery, slick, cunning, sly
lidah, tongue
lihat, kelihatan, visible, able to be seen, apparent, to look like, appear. **melihat**, to look, to see. **memperlihatkan**, to display, exhibit, show. **penglihatan**, vision, eyesight, point of view
liku, berliku-liku, winding, curving
lilin, wax, candle
lima, five. **kelima**, fifth
limpah, melimpah, to overflow
lincah, lively
lindung, berlindung, to shelter. **kelindungan**, sheltered. **perlindungan**, shelter, protection
lingkar, lingkaran, circle, coil. **melingkar-lingkar**, to circle a
lingkung, lingkungan, circle, area, environment, sphere, domain
lintang, melintang, to lie across, to lie athwart
lintas, melintasi, to pass by (quickly). **terlintas**, to cross o's mind
lisan, oral, spoken
listrik, electric, electricity
lobang, hole = **lubang**
lodong, large bamboo tube, water container
logika, logic
logis, logical
lohor, noon, midday
lompat, melompat, to jump. **melompat-lompat**, to jump (up and down)
loncat, meloncat, to hop, jump around
lonceng, bell
lonjak, melonjak, to jump up
lontar, terlontar, thrown, fallen down
lowong, lowongan, vacancy
luar, outside. **luar biasa**, extraordinary. **luar negeri**, overseas, abroad. **pengeluaran**, expenditure
luas, wide, extensive. **meluas**, to spread, to become extensive. **meluaskan**, to broaden, extend (s.t. originally small or narrow). **memperluas**, to broaden, extend (s.t. already extensive)
lubang, hole = **lobang**
ludah, saliva, spittle. **meludahkan**, to spit out
luka, wound, cut, injury. **luka berat**, seriously wounded
lukis, lukis-melukis, anything to do with painting. **lukisan**, painting, picture. **melukis**, to paint. **melukiskan**, to depict, portray, describe. **pelukis**, painter, artist
lumayan, sufficient, moderate
lumpur, mud. **berlumpur**, muddy
luncur, meluncur, to glide, slide, slip away, to move smoothly. **meluncurkan**, to launch s.t.
luntur, to run (of dye), to fade
lupa, to forget. **kelupaan**, forgotten. **melupakan**, to forget. **pelupa**, forgetful person
lurah, village headman. **kelurahan**, administrative district
lurus, straight
lusa, the day after tomorrow

M

mabuk, drunk. **mabuk pangkat**, power-crazy, power-drunk
macam, kind, sort, variety. **semacam**, a kind of
mahal, expensive
mahasiswa, university student
main, to play. **bermain**, to play, amuse o.s. **bermain-main**, playful, all in fun. **permainan**, game, performance, acting. **permainan bertaruh**, a gambling game.
majalah, magazine

majikan, employer, boss
maju, to go forward, advance. **kemajuan**, progress
maka, then, therefore, so. **makanya**, consequently, because of that
makan, to eat. **makan biaya**, to take, use up, require money. **makan waktu**, to take, require time. **makanan**, food. **pemakan**, eater, consumer. **pemakan sirih**, a betel chewer
makhluk, creature
makin, the more
makmur, prosperous
makna, meaning. **makna hakiki**, true meaning, real significance
maksud, purpose, meaning, intention. **bermaksud**, to plan, intend, mean, to have the intention. **memaksud(kan)**, to intend, plan, mean
malah, on the contrary. **malahan**, even, but even, in fact, but rather, on the contrary
malam, night, evening. **malam hari**, evening, night time, in the evening. **malam-malam**, late at night
malang, unlucky, unfortunate
malas, lazy, indolent, unwilling. **pemalas**, lazy bones, lazy person
malu, shy. **pemalu**, shy person, shrinking violet
mampu, capable, able, well-to-do, wealthy, to afford, be able. **kemampuan**, ability, prosperity
mana, which, how. **mana bisa**, how could it be! **di mana-mana**, anywhere. **di mana saja**, anywhere at all. **ke mana saja**, no matter where
mandi, to bathe, wash, shower, take a bath
manfaat, benefit
mangga, mango
manggut, to nod
manik, **bermanik-manik**, to wear a string of beads, in the shape of beads, like beads
manis, sweet
manja, spoilt, spoiled
mantu, son- or daughter-in-law = **menantu**
manusia, mankind, human being, person. **kemanusiaan**, humanity
mara, danger, disaster. **marabahaya**, disaster, catastrophe, perils
marah, angry, to be angry. **kemarahan**, anger. **memarahi**, to scold, be angry with s.o. **memarahkan**, to infuriate, anger. **pemarah**, hothead, s.o. easily angered
mari, come on! let's! **ke mari**, hither, to here
martabat, prestige, dignity
masa, period of time. **masa depan**, the future. **masakah** = **masakan**, how on earth! how could it be! impossible
masak, ripe, mature, cooked. **masak-memasak**, the art of cooking, anything to do with cooking. **masakan**, cooking. **memasak(-masak)**, to cook
masalah, problem
mashur, **(masyhur)**, **memashurkan**, to make famous, to spread the news
masih, still
masing-masing, each, respectively, individual
masjid, mosque = **mesjid**
masuk, to enter, come in, to join. **masukangin**, to catch a cold, a chill. **kemasukan**, possessed, entered accidentally. **memasukkan**, to place s.t. inside, to put s.t. in, to enter s.t. **termasuk**, to include, including
masyarakat, society, community
mata, eye. **mata-air**, a spring. **mata-mata**, spy. **semata-mata**, simply,

merely
matahari, sun
matang, mature, cooked
mati, to die. **mati-matian**, as hard as possible
mau, to want, desire. **maupun**, as well as, both, and. **semaunya**, at will, to do as one pleases
mayang, palm blossom. **bermayang-mayang**, clusters (of bananas still on the stem)
mayat, corpse
mbok, mother
mekanik, (Javanese) mechanics
mekanis, mechanical
mekanisme, mechanism
mekar, to open up, to blossom
Melayu, Malay
memang, certainly, of course, indeed, in fact, really
meja, table, desk
menang, to win. **menang bertaruh**, to win at gambling. **kemenangan**, victory
menantu, son-, daughter-in-law = **mantu**
mengapa, why
mentega, butter
menung, **bermenung-menung**, to muse, daydream. **termenung**, reflected on
merah, red. **merah-meradang**, red and burning. **merah padam**, very red
merdeka, free, liberated. **kemerdekaan**, freedom, independence
mereka, they, their, them
mesin, machine. **mesin tulis**, typewriter
Mesir, Egypt,
mesjid, mosque = **masjid**
meskipun, although
mesra, absorbed, fond(ly), intimate
mesti, certainly, surely, must, have to. **(se)mestinya**, it must be, should, ought, actually
meter, metre
milik, property. **memiliki**, to possess
mimbar, podium, rostrum
mimpi, dream
mindring, collector (of instalment payments)
minggu, week. **mingguan**, weekly
minta, to ask, request, beg. **minta berhenti**, to resign. **meminta**, to ask politely, request. **permintaan**, request
minum, to drink. **meminum**, to drink. **minuman**, drink, beverage. **minumankeras**, alcoholic drink(s). **peminum**, a (heavy) drinker
minyak, oil. **meminyaki**, to oil s.t.
misa, mass
misal, example. **misalnya**, for example
missi, mission
miskin, poor
mobil, car
modal, capital, investment funds
modern, modern
moga, initiative. **moga-moga**, may, I hope that
mogok, strike
mori, cotton material used for **batik**
muat, **muatan**, load, contents. **memuat**, to load, contain
muda, young. **muda-belia**, very youthful. **pemuda**, young man, youth, adolescent. **pemudi**, young woman, adolescent. **pemuda-pemudi**, young people, adolescents
mudah, easy. **mudah-mudahan**, hopefully, it is hoped that
mudik, to go up country, to go upstream
muka, face, front. **di muka**, in front. **mengemukakan**, to put forward, to propose, suggest. **permukaan**, face, surface
mukim, **bermukim**, to stay, live, reside

mula, beginning (n), cause, reason
mula-mula, at first, in the beginning, since. **mulanya**, cause, reason. **mulai**, to begin, start, commence. **memulai**, to begin, start, commence. **permulaan**, beginning. **semula**, originally, in the first place
mulia, respect, honour, veneration
muluk, high-sounding, bombastic, extravagant
mulut, mouth. **mulut kepundan**, mouthpiece
muncul, to appear, to rise up
mundur, to retreat
mungkin, possibly, maybe, perhaps, probably, possible. **kemungkinan**, possibility, probability. **memungkinkan**, to make s.t. possible, to enable
murid, pupil, student
musik, music. **musik pop**, pop(ular) music
musim, season. **musim dingin**, winter **musim hujan**, wet season. **musim kemarau**, dry season
musuh, enemy. **bermusuhan**, to be mutual enemies, to feel enmity towards e.o.
mutlak, complete, absolute
mutu, quality, grade. **bermutu**, valuable, superior

N

nabi, prophet
nada, tone
nafas (napas), nafas panjang, deep breath. **bernafas**, to breathe
nafkah, subsistence, a living. **nafkah hidup**, livelihood
naik, to travel, go by, to board, get into, to rise, ascend. **naik haji**, to make a pilgrimage to Mecca. **kenaikan**, increase, rise
naluri, instinct
nama, name. **nama samaran**, pen name, pseudonym. **bernama(kan)**, to be named. **menamai**, to call, give a name to. **menamakan**, to call, give a name to. **ternama**, well-known, famous
nampak, visible, evident. **nampaknya**, apparently, obviously, evidently
namun, yet, still. **namun demikian**, nevertheless
nanar, dazed, confused, angry
nanti, later on, in a while. **nanti malam**, this evening, tonight. **menanti(-nanti)**, to wait for. **menantikan**, to wait for
nasi, cooked rice
nasib, fate, lot, destiny
nasihat, advice. **penasihat**, adviser, counsellor
nasraniah, Christian
Ndoro, Madam, Sir (Javanese)
negara, state, country. **negarawan**, stateman. **negarawati**, stateswoman
neg(e)ri. country. **negeri orang**, foreign country, place
nelayan, fisherman
nenek, grandmother, **nenek-moyang**, ancestors
neraka, hell
nganga, menganga, to gape, to open the mouth widely
ngeri, terrified, stricken with panic. **kengerian**, horror, fear
nian, really, quite, very, excessively
nikah, menikah, to marry. **menikahkan**, to marry s.o. off. **pernikahan**, marriage
nikmat, menikmati, to enjoy. **menikmatkan**, to enjoy
nilai, value. **menilai**, to judge, evaluate
nun, yonder
nusantara, (Indonesian) archipelago
nyaman, menyamankan, refreshing, to freshen up, to make fit

nyanyi, song. **nyanyian**, song. **bernyanyi**, to sing. **menyanyikan** to sing s.t. **penyanyi**, singer
nyaring, loud (of voice), high-pitched (of hearing)
nyata, clear, obvious, evident. **kenyataan**, fact, reality. **menyatakan**, to state, express, declare, explain, indicate. **ternyata**, obvious, evident, to prove to be
Nyonya, Madam, Mrs, you, your

O

obat, medicine, medication. **obat tetes** drops (for eyes, ears etc.). **berobat**, to receive medical treatment
ogah, ogah-ogahan, reluctantly
olah, seolah-olah, as if, as though
oleh, by, because of. **beroleh**, to receive. **memperoleh**, to get, obtain, procure
ombak, wave
onggok, teronggok, piled, heaped up
ongkos, price, cost, expense. **mengongkosi**, to finance, pay for
opelet, small urban bus
operasi, beroperasi, to operate
optimisme, optimism
orang, person, classifier for human beings. **orang asing**, foreigner. **orang bawahan**, subordinate. **orang buangan**, outcast, exile. **orang kedua**, second person (grammatical). **orang lain**, other people, others. **orang Mesir**, Egyptian. **orang minta-minta**, beggar. **orang tahanan**, prisoner, detainee. **orangtua**, parent(s). **seorang**, a, one person, someone. **seorang diri**, alone
organisasi, organisation
organisme, organism
otak, brain. **otak besar**, cerebrum. **otak kecil**, cerebellum

P

pabrik, factory
pacar, boyfriend, girlfriend, sweetheart
pacu, berpacu, to have a race.
pacuan, race-course.
pacul, hoe
pada, at, on, in
padahal, although, besides, whereas
padam, extinguished
padang, plain, field
padat, compact, dense, overcrowded
padi, rice plant, unhusked rice
padu, berpadu, to blend, unite
pagar, fence
pagi, morning. **pagi ini**, this morning. **pagi-pagi (benar)**, (very) early
pagut, memagut, to embrace, fix on (of eyes)
paham, view, understanding. **memahami**, to understand s.o. **memahamkan**, to understand, note, comprehend = **faham**
pahat, pahat-memahat, anything to do with sculpting. **memahat**, to sculpt, to carve. **pemahat**, sculptor
pahlawan, hero
paidon, spitoon
pajak, tax
pajang, pajangan, spray (of flowers), display
pak, pack, box, abbreviation of **bapak**
pakai, berpakaian, to dress, put on clothes, to wear clothes, to change o's clothes. **memakai**, to use, to wear. **memakaikan**, to put s.t. on for s.o. **pakaian**, clothes, garments. **pakaian bekas**, second-hand clothes. **pakaian seragam**, uniform.

pemakaian, use, usage, consumption. **terpakai**, used (up). **tidak terpakai**, to be of no use, without
paket, parcel
paksa, paksaan, force, compulsion. **terpaksa**, forced, compelled
paku, terpaku, fastened, nailed
paling, the most. **paling kurang** = **paling tidak**, at least
palma, palm
paman, uncle
pampang, memampang, clearly visible, exposed. **terpampang**, spread out, set out
panas, hot. **memanaskan**, to heat or warm s.t.
pancaindera, the five senses
pancar, memancarkan, to radiate, to broadcast
panci, pan
pandai, clever, intelligent. **kepandaian**, skill
pandang, pandang mata, the expression in (o's) eyes. **berpandang-pandangan**, to look at e.o. **memandang**, to look at, gaze at. **memandangi**, to look at. **pandangan**, opinion, view. **pemandangan**, view, scene, scenery
pandir, stupid
panen(an), harvest (n)
panggil, memanggil, to call
pangkas, to cut hair, haircut, trim. **berpangkas**, to have a hair cut. **memangkas**, to cut, prune, trim
pangkat, rank
panitia, committee
panjang, long, length. **memanjang**, to stretch lengthwise, to the very end (of hair), to stretch. **sepanjang**, along. **sepanjang hari**, all day long
pantai, beach, coast, shore
pantang, pantangan, an order prohibiting s.t., taboo
pantas, fitting, proper, right, appropriate. **pantaslah**, no wonder, of course
papan, plank, board
papas, berpapasan, to pass e.o.
para, plural marker (used of humans), rack or shelf in the kitchen over a stove
parang, machete
paras, face, looks
partai, political party
paruh, separuh, a half, part of
paru-paru, lungs
pas, to fit
pasang, sepasang, a pair, set
pasar, market. **memasarkan**, to market. **pemasaran**, marketing
pasir, sand. **pasiran**, sandy beach, shore
paspor, passport
pasti, certain, definite. **memastikan**, to determine, ascertain, to confirm
pastor, priest
patah, broken, classifier for **kata**. **patah hati**, to be broken-hearted. **mematahkan**, to break
patuh, obedient, submissive. **kepatuhan**, obedience, submissiveness
patung, statue, sculpture
patut, proper, right, correct, fitting, appropriate
payung, umbrella. **berpayung**, to have, use an umbrella
pecah, broken, shattered, smashed, to break out. **pecah-belah**, crockery, disunited, broken to pieces. **pecah- pecah**, cracked, broken. **memecah**, to break. **memecahkan**, to break, smash, shatter s.t. **pecahan**, fragment, splinter, shard. **perpecahan**, division, disunity
pecat, memecat, to fire, discharge, sack
peci, black velvet cap = **pici**

pedih, smarting, sore, stinging = **perih**
pedoman, guide, sense of direction, guideline
peduli, (akan), to bother (about). **tidak peduli**, to pay no attention, be unconcerned (with)
pegal, stiff and aching
pegang, memegang, to hold
pegawai, official, employee
peka, sensitive
pekerti, character, nature (of people)
pekik, yell, scream. **memekik**, to scream
pelahan, pelahan-(pe)lahan, slow(ly), soft (of voice) = **pelan**
pelan, slow, soft. **kepelanan**, softness (of speech) = **pelahan**
pelik, complex, complicated
PELITA, (PEmbangunan LIma TAhun) Indonesian Five-Year Development Plan
pelopor, pioneer
pelosok, outlying region, corner
peluit, horn, whistle
peluk, berpeluk-pelukan, to embrace, cuddle, hug e.o. **memeluk**, to embrace, hug, cuddle
pena, pen
pencil, terpencil, isolated
pendek, short
pendita, religious scholar
pendopo, porch, verandah
pengantin, bride, bridegroom
pengaruh, influence. **berpengaruh**, to have an influence. **mempengaruhi**, to affect, influence
pening, dizzy
penjara, goal, prison
pensil, pencil = **pinsil**
pensiun, to retire, pension
penting, important. **kepentingan**, vested interest, advantage, needs. **mementingkan**, to consider important, to emphasise, bring to notice. **mementingkan diri sendiri**, to put o's first, to be selfish
penuh, full. **penuh sesak**, packed tight. **memenuhi**, to fill, to fulfil
pepaya, paw paw
per, a spring, made of wire
perahu, boat
p(e)rajurit, soldier
perang, war. **Perang Dunia Kedua**. World War II
perawan, virgin. **perawan tua**, old maid
percaya, to believe, to trust. **percaya-mempercayai**, mutual trust. **kepercayaan**, trust, faith, belief, confidence
perempuan, woman, female
pergi, to go. **bepergian**, to be out and about
peribahasa, proverb
perih, smarting, sore = **pedih**
perikemanusiaan, humanity, humanitarianism
periksa, memeriksa, to examine, test, assess, search, check. **memeriksakan**, to have s.t. examined. **pemeriksa**, examiner. **pemeriksaan**, check-up, examination, inspection
perintah, pemerintah, government
peristiwa, incident, event, affair
perkakas, tools, implements. **perkakas dapur**, kitchen utensils. **perkakas rumah**, furniture
perkara, case, matter
perkasa, courageous, bold
perlu, need, necessity, to need, to be necessary. **seperlunya**, the necessary, in moderation
permisi, excuse me, permission, leave
pernah, ever, once. **tidak pernah**, never
pers, press, media
perspektip, perspective

pertama, first, the first
perut, stomach, abdomen
perwira, officer, brave, courageous
pesan, message, order. **memesan**, to order
pesat, quick, rapid
pesawat, machine, instrument, plane. **pesawat terbang** = **pesawat udara**, aeroplane
pesisir, beach, coastal area
pesta, party, feast
petik, memetik, to pick
pici, black velvet cap = **peci**
pidato, speech, address
pihak, side, party, representative. **berpihak**, to take sides, side with, favour
pijak, terpijak, trodden down, stepped on
pijit, memijit, to squeeze, massage. **memijiti**, to massage
pikir, opinion, idea, thought. **berpikir**, to think. **memikirkan**, to think about s.t., consider. **pemikiran**, thinking. **pikiran**, thought, idea, reason, rational mind. **terpikir**, thought, occurred to, crossed o's mind = **fikir**
pikul, a unit of weight (137 lbs). **memikul**, to carry on the shoulders, to shoulder
pilih, memilih, to choose, select. **pemilihan**, election. **pilihan**, choice. **terpilih**, chosen, selected
pilem, film
pimpin, memimpin, to lead. **memimpin misa**, to say Mass. **pemimpin**, leader
pindah, to move, shift, transfer. **pindah-memindah**, to be contagious. **memindahkan**, to move, transfer s.t. or s.o.
pinggang, waist, loins
pinggir, edge, shore. **meminggir**, to go, move to the side
pinjam, meminjam, to borrow from. **meminjami**, to lend s.o. s.t. **meminjamkan**, to lend s.t. to s.o. **pinjaman**, loan
pinsil, pencil = **pensil**
pinta, to request, ask
pintar, clever, dilligent, intelligent
pintu, door
piring, plate
pisah, berpisah, to part, separated. **perpisahan**, farewell, parting, separation
pisang, banana
pisau, knife
pistol, gun
pita, ribbon, tape
piuh, memiuh, to wring, twist
plastik, plastic
podium, podium
pohon, tree
pojok, corner
pola, pattern
polisi, police
politik, politics, political
pompa, memompa, to pump
pondok, hut, cabin
populer, popular. **mempopulerkan**, to popularise, to make popular
pos, post
posisi, position
potong, memotong, to cut (off), slice, **memotong-motong**, to chop up, cut into pieces. **potongan**, discount, deduction, reduction. **sepotong**, a slice, a piece. **terpotong-potong**, to be fragmented
pramugari, hostess
prasangka, prejudice
presiden, president, presidential
pria, man, male
pribadi, individual, personal, private. **berkepribadian**, to have character, personality, individuality. **kepribadian**, personality
prinsip, principle
priyayi, (priai), the upper middle class

produksi, production
profil, profile
profesor, professor
program, program
propaganda, propaganda
proses, process
proyek, project
psikologis, psychology
puadai, bridal settee, couch
puas, satisfied, content. **kepuasan**, satisfaction. **memuaskan**, satisfying, pleasing, satisfactory
pucat, pale
puja, pemuja, worshipper, devotee
puji, pujian, praise
pukul, time, o'clock. **pukul-memukul**, to hit e.o. **memukul(i)**, to beat, hit **pemukul**, instrument used to hit s.t. **pukulan**, blow, hit, strike
pula, also, too, again, the same, so
pulang, to go home
pulau, island. **kepulauan**, archipelago islands
puluh, ten. **puluhan**, decade
pun, even, emphatic particle
puncak, peak
puntung, butt, stub
punya, to own, have, possess. **kepunyaan**, possession, property. **mempunyai**, to possess, own, have
purbasangka, prejudice
pupuk, memupuk, to foster, nurture, to cultivate, to fertilise
pusaka, heirloom
pustaka, reading matter. **perpustakaan**, library. **pustakawan**, librarian
putar, memutar-mutar(kan), to twist, turn
put(e)ra, son, child
put(e)ri, girl, daughter
putih, white. **memutih**, to become white, turn white, to whiten
putus, to break, snap. **putus asa**, despair, hopelessness. **berputus asa**, to despair, to give up hope. **keputusan**, decision. **memutuskan**, to break, sever s.t., to decide. **terputus-putus**, broken, halting

R

radang, meradang, to become inflamed, hot, burning
ragu, meragukan, to doubt, be doubtful
rahasia, secret, mysterious
raih, meraih, to take
raja, king
rajalela, merajalela, to operate unchecked, to be at large
rajin, conscientious, diligent
rakyat, the people, the masses, the man-in-the-street
ramah, friendly. **keramahan**, friendliness. **peramah**, a jovial, friendly person
ramai, crowded, busy
rambut, hair
rampas, merampas, to rob, plunder, steal
ramping, (rampis), lithe, slim, slender
rampok, merampok, to rob. **perampok**, robber, bandit
rangka, plan, draft
rangkap, merangkap, to include, cover, encompass
ranjang, couch, bed
ransel, knapsack, rucksack
rantau, abroad, reaches, curve, bay. **merantau**, to leave o's home, to live away from home, go abroad
rampat, dense, compact, close, familiar, meeting
rapi, neat
rasa, rasanya, it seems. **rasa pedih** pain, soreness, stinging. **merasa**, to feel, to experience. **merasai**, to feel, to experience. **merasakan**, to feel, to experience, to savour.

perasaan, feeling. **perasaan hati**, emotion. **terasa**, to be felt, experienced
rata, flat, level. **rata-rata**, an average, all, nearly all
ratu, queen, king
raung, meraung, to moan, to roar
rawat, merawat, to nurse. **perawatan**, treatment
raya, perayaan, ceremony
rayu, merayu-rayu, to flatter, seduce, to persuade, to deceive
realistis, realistic
reaksi, reaction
rebah, to fall down
redup, dull
rejeki (rezeki), providence, good fortune (by extension, livelihood)
rekah, merekah, split open, cracked open, burst open (of buds)
remaja, adolescent, of marriageable age
remas, meremas, to crush, squeeze
rembes, merembes, to ooze through, to penetrate
rembet, merembet, to spread, to creep
remuk, shattered, crushed, smashed. **remuk-redam**, crush to pieces. **meremukkan**, to shatter, smash
renang, berenang, to swim
rencana, plan, planning. **berencana**, to (have a) plan. **merencanakan**, to plan s.t.
rendah, low
rendam, berendam, to wallow. **terendam**, submerged, under water, to wallow
rentak, serentak, all together, in a body, all at once, suddenly
renung, merenungi, to reflect on. **merenungkan**, to gaze, look at
repot, busy, be fussy about, **merepotkan**, to inconvenience cause a bother
resap, meresap, to penetrate, to be absorbed
restoran, restaurant
retak, crack, split, cracked. **keretakan**, crack, split, rift. **meretakkan**, to crack, damage s.t.
revolusi, revolution
reyot,dilapidated, ramshackle
riang, gay, cheerful. **keriangan**, cheerfulness
ribu, thousand. **ribuan**, thousands
ribut, noisy
rimbun, merimbuni, to shade
ringan, light. **meringankan**, to lighten, alleviate
ringgit, Dutch silver coin = 250 cents
ringkas, brief, short, concise
ringkuk, meringkuk, to languish, to be confined
rintih, merintih, to groan, moan, sigh
robek, torn
roboh, to cave in, collapse. **merobohkan**, to overthrow, to ruin
rogo(h), merogo(h), to feel in o's pocket
roh, spirit, soul
rokok, cigarette. **merokok**, to smoke. **perokok**, smoker
Romawi, Roman
rombong, rombongan, group
rongrong, merongrong, to gnaw, entice, dig out, stimulate
rontok, to fall out
roti, bread
ruang, ruangan, space, room, hall
rubah, merubah, to change = **ubah**
rukun, harmonious, in accord, pillar, foundation
rumah, house, home. **rumah tangga** household. **perumahan**, housing
rumit, hard, difficult, complex, complicated
rumpun, clump, group, cluster
rumput, grass
runcing, pointed, sharp

rupa, appearance, form, shape, kind. **rupanya**, it seems, it appears. **berupa**, to have the form of, to be in the shape of. **merupakan**, to be, be a type of, be like something, constitute. **menyerupai**, to be alike, resemble. **menyerupakan**, to treat, regard as the same, in the same way. **serupa**, similar, alike, of the same kind

rupiah, unit of Indonesian currency

rusak, broken. **kerusakan**, damage, harm. **merusakkan**, to damage, hurt, destroy, ruin

rutin(e), routine

ruwet, complicated

S

saat, moment, time

sabar, patient, tolerant. **bersabar**, to be patient, to let s.t. pass. **penyabar**, a patient person

sabun, soap

sabung, **bersabung**, to fight

sadar, conscious(ly), aware of, to realise. **kesadaran**, awareness. **menyadari**, to realise = **sedar**

sado, horse-drawn vehicle (Medan)

sadur, **saduran**, adaptation

sagu, sago

sahabat, friend. **persahabatan**, friendship

sahut, **menyahut**, to reply, answer, respond. **bersahut-sahutan**, to answer, reply to e.o.

saing, **bersaingan**, to compete, to be in competition

saja, only, just

sajak, poem

saji, **menyajikan**, to serve s.o. s.t., to supply. **penyajian**, presentation

sakit, sick, to be sick, to hurt, pain. **sakit gigi**, toothache. **sakit hati**, resentful, annoyed, irritated, to feel bitter. **sakit jantung**, heart trouble.**sakit pinggang**, backache. **sakit rasanya**, to hurt, feel painful, **kesakitan**, suffering pain, to be in pain. **menyakitkan**, to hurt. **penyakit**, illness, disease

saksama (seksama), careful(ly)

saksi, **menyaksikan**, to see, witness

saku, pocket

salah, wrong, incorrect, mistaken, to be at fault. **salah seorang**, one of (for people). **salah suatu**, one of (for things). **bersalah**, to be guilty, wrong, to be at fault. **kesalahan**, mistake, offence, crime. **menyalahi**, to violate, to conflict with. **menyalahkan**, to accuse, to blame, deny

salak, **menyalak**, to bark

salam, regards, greetings

saling, one another, e.o.

salon, **salon kecantikan**, beauty salon

salur, **menyalurkan**, to channel, lead into, to convey. **saluran**, gutter, drain, channel

salve, benediction

sama, same, equal to. **sama-sama**, together, jointly. **sama sekali**, entirely, completely. **bersama**, mutual, together. **bersamaan dengan**, the same as, similar to, to exhibit similarity to. **bersama-sama**, together, joint(ly). **mempersamakan**, to place on a par with, to be tantamount to. **sesama mereka**, amongst themselves

samar, dim, vague. **kesamaran**, dimness, gloom. **menyamar**, to be in disguise, to be disguised. **menyamarkan**, to disguise s.o. or s.t., to dim s.t.

sambil, while, simultaneously

sambuk, husk of a coconut

sambung, **menyambung**, to connect,

link up, join, to continue. **penyambung**, connector, link
sambut, bersambut, answered. **menyambut**, to welcome, to accept
sampah, rubbish
sampai, until, to reach, arrive. **sampai hati**, to have the heart to. **sampai-menyampai**, to make ends meet, to get by. **menyampaikan**, to convey
samping, side
sampir, menyampirkan, to sling over o's shoulder, to hang
sana, there. **di sana-sini**, here and there
sandung, tersandung, to trip over, stumble
sang, sangat, very, extremely
sanggama, bersanggama, to have sex, coitus
sanggul, hairknot, chignon. **menyanggulkan**, to put o's hair up in a knot
sanggup, to be able to, capable of, willing, to have the power to. **kesanggupan**, ability, capability
sangka, menyangka, to think, suppose, to expect, to suspect
sangkar, cage
sangsi, unsure, dubious, doubtful. **menyangsikan**, to doubt
santai, informal, casual, to relax. **bersantai- santai**, to relax
sapa, menyapa, to speak, address, to greet
sapi, cow. **sapi jantan**, bull
sarang, nest, refuge, haunt
sarapan, breakfast
sardencis, sardines
saring, saringan, strainer. **menyaring**, to strain
sarung, sarong, sheath. **sarung pelekat**, sarong to pray in
sast(e)ra, literature. **kesusasteraan**, literature. **sastrawan**, man of letters. **sastrawati**, woman of letters
sate, meat grilled on skewers
satin, satin
satria, knight
satu, one, a, something. **kesatuan**, unit, unity, totality. **satu(per)satu**, one by one. **satu-satu**, very few. **satu-satunya**, only, sole
saudagar, trader, merchant
saudara, you, your, Mr, Mrs, relative(s)
sawah, irrigated rice fields. **bersawah**, to work in rice fields. **persawahan**, wet rice cultivation, wet rice plantation
saya, I, my, me. **saya sendiri**, (I) personally
sayang, love, affection, sorrow, pity, what a shame, its a pity, unfortunately. **menyayangi**, to love s.o. or s.t. to be fond of, attached to. **penyayang**, charitable, merciful (person)
sayup, faintly heard, indistinct
sayur, vegetable, **sayur-sayuran**, vegetables. **menyayur**, to make a kind of vegetable dish
sebab, reason, cause, because. **menyebabkan**, to cause
sebar, penyebaran, spreading, circulation, distribution
seberang, across, opposite. **menyeberangi**, to cross
sebut, menyebut(kan), to mention, call name. **tersebut**, afore mentioned, above mentioned
sedang, to be in the process of, while, whilst. **sedangkan**, while, whereas
sedar, aware. **menyedari**, to realise, to be aware of = **sadar**
sederhana, simple, plain, straightforward
sedia, bersedia, ready. **menyediakan**, to prepare, make ready

sedikit, a little. **sedikit demi sedikit**, little by little. **sedikit-sedikit**, a little bit
sedu, sob
segala, all. **segala-galanya**, everything. **segala sesuatu**, anything at all
segar, fresh, refreshing. **kesegaran**, freshness, invigoration. **menyegarkan**, refreshing, invigorating
segera, immediately, at once, instantly, quickly
sehat, well, healthy. **kesehatan**, health. **menyehatkan**, to make healthy, to heal, cure
sejahtera, **kesejahteraan**,well-being, prosperity
sejak, since = **semenjak**
sejarah, history
sejuk, cool. **menyejukkan**, to cool, soothe, refresh s.t. or s.o., soothing, cooling
sekali, see **kali**
sekarang, now
sekolah, school. **Sekolah Dasar**, primary school
sekretaris, secretary
seksuil, sexual
sel, cell
selamat, safe, congratulations. **keselamatan**, safety, security. **menyelamatkan**, to save, rescue
selatan, south
selempang, **terselempang**, draped
selendang, stole worn over one shoulder. **menyelendangkan**, to hang, carry over o's shoulder, or around o's neck, to sling over o's shoulder
selenggara, **menyelenggarakan**, to organise, to take care of
selera, appetite
selesai, finished. **menyelesaikan**, to finish s.t. to solve, settle
selidik, careful, critical, observant. **menyelidiki**, to observe closely, study
selimut, **berselimutkan**, covered, to use as a blanket. **memperselimut**, to use as a blanket.
selinap, **menyelinapi**, to creep up on, to slip into, to slip away
selit, **terselit**, stuck fast
selubung, **berselubung(kan)**, to cover o.s. up, wrapped up
seluruh, all, entire, whole, all over. **keseluruhan**, the whole, totality
semadi (samadi), tranquility, meditation
semak, uncultivated growth, bush undergrowth, weeds. **semak gelegah**, water reed(s). **menyemak**, to grow wild, to become overgrown
semangat, enthusiasm, spirit. **bersemangat**, enthusiastic
sembah, **menyembah**, to pay homage, to bow
sembahyang, to pray. **bersembahyang**, to pray
sembarang, no matter who, what, which. **sembarang orang**, just anyone, any old person. **sembarang tempat**, just anywhere, any old place
sembilan, nine
semboyan, slogan
sembuh, healthy, well. **menyembuhkan**, to make better, heal, cure, to make healthy, to relieve
semenjak, since = **sejak**
sementara, while, a while, the time being, a moment
semerbak, fragrant
semesta, the whole, all over
sempat, to have time, to take the opportunity, chance. **kesempatan**, opportunity
sempit, narrow
semprot, **menyemprot**, to spray, to squirt
sempurna, perfect

semua, all, everything, **semua orang**, everyone
semut, ant. **menyemut**, to swarm like ants
sen, cent
senang, happy. **bersenang hati**, to rejoice. **kesenangan**, contentment, pleasure. **menyenangi**, to like, to be content with. **menyenangkan**, enjoyable, pleasing
senantiasa, always, continually
senapang, rifle, gun
sendiri, own, self, alone, personally. **sendiri-sendiri**, separately. **menyendiri**, to be alone, isolate o.s. **sendirian**, alone. **tersendiri**, individual, isolated, set apart
sengaja, intentional, on purpose, deliberate
sengsara, misery, suffering
seni, art, art form. **berseni**, artistic, to have artistic qualities. **kesenian**, art, culture. **seniman**, artist. **seniwati**, lady artist
senjata, **bersenjata(kan)**, to be armed (with), armed. **mempersenjatai**, to arm s.o.
sentak, **menyentak**, to trigger, to jerk, to pull at
sentuh, **menyentuh**, to touch lightly
senyum, smile. **tersenyum**, to smile
sepak, to kick. **sepak bola**, football
sepatu, shoe(s). **sepatu boot**, boot(s). **sepatu kanpas**, sandshoe(s)
seperti, like, as. **seperti halnya (dengan)**, as is the case (with)
sepi, still, quiet, hushed
serah, **menyerah**, to surrender. **menyerahkan**, to surrender, give up, hand over s.t., to leave up to, to regulate. **penyerahan**, surrender
serak, **berserakan**, to be scattered, spread about
serang, to attack. **menyerang**, to attack. **serangan**, attack
seraya, while, simultaneously
serba, quite
serep, **(serap)**, spare
seri, light, radiance. **berseri-seri**, to light up, radiate, beam, shine (of a smile)
serikat, union, alliance, united, allied. **perserikatan**, organisation, union. **Perserikatan Bangsa-Bangsa**, (P.B.B) United Nations
serius, serious
serta, as well, and, with. **menyertai**, to accompany, to join in, participate
sering, often. **seringkali**, often
seru, **menyeru**, to call, to shout
sesal, **menyesal**, to regret. **penyesalan**, regret, remorse
sesuai, suitable, to agree, to fit. **bersesuaian**, to be in agreement. **bersesuaian paham**, to agree with e.o. **menyesuaikan (diri)**, to adapt (o.s.) **persesuaian**, agreement
seterika, **menyeterika**, to iron, press
setia, loyal, dependable, **kesetiaan**, loyalty
sewa, rent, hire. **menyewa**, to rent, to hire. **sewaan**, rented, hired articles
si, a kind of definite article used before names, non proper nouns, and before words which describe s.o. or s.t. e.g. **Si Hasan**, **Si Tolol**, Stupid One
sirene, siren
sirih, a quid of betel leaf, areca nut, **gambir** and lime
sisi, side
sisir, comb, bunch. **bersisir**, to comb. **menyisir**, to comb. **sesisir pisang**, a hand of bananas
sistim, system
sistimatis, systematic
siti, title for a woman of high lineage
situ, there
soal, problem, question, matter,

issue. **persoalan**, problem, matter
sobek, torn
sodor, menyodorkan, to pass, hand s.t., offer
sokong, menyokong, to support, give support to s.o. or s.t.
sopan, respectful, courteous, well-mannered. **kesopanan**, good manners, propriety, decency. **menyopankan**, to civilise, to show respect
sore, afternoon
sorga, heaven, paradise
sorot, menyorot, to shine
soto, meat soup with vegetables
spontan, spontaneous
stabil, stable, steady
stadion, stadium
stasion, station
statistik, statistic(s)
suami, husband. **suami-istri**, husband and wife, married couple. **bersuami(kan)**, to marry (of a woman). **mempersuamikan**, to be married off
suap, suapan, bribe
suara, voice, noise
suasana, environment, atmosphere
si(h), an enclitic used to soften or confirm what follows, certainly, surely
sia-sia, vain, futile, useless
siang, late morning, early afternoon
siap, ready, prepared. **mempersiapkan**, to arrange, prepare. **menyiapkan**, to prepare
siapa, who. **siapa-siapa**, who(so)sever, who are the ones
siar, menyiarkan, to announce, broadcast, spread. **penyiar**, announcer
sibuk, busy
sifat, character, characteristic, quality, trait
sigap, efficient, skilful, agile. **kesigapan**, efficiency, energy, capability, quick action, vitality, vigour, agility
sikap, attitude
sikat, brush. **sikatgigi**, toothbrush
siksa, torture. **menyiksa**, to torture, ill treat
sila, mempersilakan, to invite
silang, menyilang-nyilangkan, to cross, to criss-cross
simpan, menyimpan, to store, keep, save
simpang, simpang-siur, criss-crossing, zigzagging, weaving in and out. **persimpangan**, intersection
simpatik, sympathetic, friendly
simpul, to appear. **kesimpulan**, conclusion
sinar, ray, light, gleam, **bersinar**, to shine, sparkling
singa, lion
singgung, tersinggung, offended, hurt
singkat, brief, short, concise
sini, here
sipat, menyipati, to put on mascara
sirat, tersirat, concealed in o's heart, entered o's mind
sirkus, circus
suatu, one, a (certain). **sesuatu**, something, a certain
subuh, dawn prayer
sudah, already. **sudah lama**, for a long time. **sesudah**, after
sudi, ready, willing, prepared
sudut, corner
suka, to like. **kesukaan**, joy, favourite (n), happiness. **menyukai**, to like s.o. or s.t. **sesuka hati**, to please o.s., do as one pleases
sukar, difficult, hard
suku, ethnic group. **kesukuan**, ethnicity
sulit, difficult, hard. **kesulitan**, difficulty. **mempersulit**, to make difficult
sumbang, menyumbang, to contribute. **sumbangan**, contribution

sumber, source
sumpah, curse, oath. **bersumpah**, to swear an oath
sumur, well (n)
sungai, river
sungguh, really, truly, very. **bersungguh-sungguh**, to make every effort. **sesungguhnya**, truly, in fact, indeed
suntik, menyuntik, to vaccinate. **suntikan**, vaccination
sunting, mempersunting, to marry, to place s.t. in o's hair
sunyi, quiet, silent, alone, deserted. **sunyi-senyap**, deathly still. **kesunyian**, loneliness, quiet, solitude
supaya, so that, in order to, in order that
surat, letter. **surat jaminan**, warranty, guarantee certificate. **surat kabar**, newspaper. **surat-menyurat**, correspondence. **persurat-kabaran**, journalism
suruh, menyuruh, to order, command, tell
surya, sun
susah, trouble, worry. **susah-payah**, great difficulty, much effort. **menyusahkan**, to cause worry, to make difficult
susul, menyusul, to follow
susun, menyusun, to arrange, order, compile. **susunan**, order, arrangement, composition, structure. **susunan komputer**, computer program
sutera, silk
syarat, conditions, requirement, requisite
syukur(lah), thank goodness

T

taat, faithful
tabik, menabik, to greet, say hullo
tabur, bertaburan, scattered
tadah, saucer
tadi, just now, recently, a short while ago. **tadi malam**, last night. **tadi pagi**, this morning. **(seperti) tadi-tadinya**, (as) before, its usual state
tafsir, men(t)afsirkan, to explain, interpret, define s.t.
tagih, menagih, to press for payment
tahan, to stand, endure, withstand. **tahan air**, waterproof. **mempertahankan**, to defend, to preserve. **menahan(-nahan)**, to restrain, arrest, detain. **tahanan**, detention, resistance
tahap, stage, phase. **bertahap**, in stages
tahu, soybean curd
tahu, to know. **tahu-menahu**, knowing everything, having to do with. **tahu-tahu**, suddenly, unexpectedly. **mengetahui**, to know s.o. or s.t., to detect, find out, discover. **pengetahuan**, knowledge
tahun, year. **tahun pelajaran**, school year. **bertahun-tahun**, for years, years and years
tajam, sharp, acute, keen
tak, no, not = **tidak**
takkan, will not (from **tak akan**)
taktis, tactic(s)
taksir, menaksir, to guess, estimate
takut, fear, fright, terror, afraid, fearful, frightened scared. **ketakutan**, fright, terror. **menakutkan**, to frighten s.o., frightening. **penakut**, scaredy cat, coward, timid person
talen, a quarter of a **rupiah**, a coin
tali, string, rope, tie
tamak, greedy, covetous
taman, park, garden. **Taman Firdaus**, Garden of Eden
tamat, finished, ended, graduated (from school), end, finish (n)

tambah, bertambah, to increase. **menambah**, to increase, add, supplement. **penambahan**, increase. **tambahan**, addition, development
tambang, menambangkan, to run or drive a vehicle for hire. **penambangan**, transport
tampak, visible, apparent. **tampaknya**, apparently
tampan, smart, stylish, handsome
tampang, source, seed, innate character(istic), internal force
tampar, menampar, to slap s.o. (across the face)
tampung, menampung, to prick up, to cope, handle, to catch
tamu, guest, visitor
tanah, ground, land, earth. **tanahair**, fatherland, homeland. **tanah lapang**, oval (n)
tanak, menanak, to cook (rice)
tanam, menanam, to plant. **penanaman**, investment. **tanaman**, plant(s),
tancap, menancapkan, to stick, k, embed insert, s.t.
tanda, sign, mark, token. **tanda salib**, sign of the cross. **tandatangan**, signature. **tanda tanya**, question mark. **menandatangani**, to sign
tanding, pertandingan, match, contest
tangan, hand
tanggal, date
tanggap, menanggap, to listen attentively, perform, to have a performance.
tangguh, menangguhkan, to hesitate, to turn s.t. down, to put s.t. off
tanggung, bertanggung-jawab, to be responsible. **mempertanggung-jawabkan**, to vouch for, account for, to justify. **pertanggungan**, guarantee, security, insurance. **pertanggungan jawab**, stocktaking, justification
tangis, menangis, to cry, weep. **penangis**, a cry-baby, s.o. who cries easily
tangkai, stem. **bertangkaikan** (per), to use (wire) as a stem
tangkap, menangkap, to capture. **tertangkap**, captured, arrested, trapped
tangkas, competent, skilful
tangkis, mengangkis, to ward off, to parry, to repulse
tani, farmer. **bertani**, to farm. **pertanian**, agriculture. **petani**, farmer, peasant
tanjung, cape, promontory
tanpa, without
tante, aunt, older woman (Dutch)
tanya, bertanya, to ask, inquire. **bertanya dalam hati** = **bertanya kepada diri sendiri**, to ask o.s. **bertanya-tanya**, to continually question. **menanyai**, to ask questions, interrogate **menanyakan**, to ask about s.t. **pertanyaan**, question
tapak, palm of the hand, sole of the foot, trail
tapi, but = **tetapi**
taraf, standard, degree, level. **taraf hidup**, standard of living
tari, to dance. **tari-menari**, anything to do with dancing. **tari-tarian**, dances, a variety of dances. **menari**, to dance. **menari-nari**, to dance, dancing
tarik, menarik, attractive, interesting, to pull, draw. **menarik diri**, to resign, withdraw. **menarik hati**, to attract, to win s.o.'s heart. **menarik perhatian**, to attract attention. **tertarik**, attracted, drawn
taruh, bertaruh, to gamble, bet. **menaruh(kan)**, to put, place, to

bet
tarung, pertarungan, fight, struggle
tas, bag, case, suitcase
tata, system, order, arrangement. **tata bahasa**, grammar
tatap, menatap, to observe intently, peer at
tatkala, when
taut, bertaut, to join. **pertautan**, association, concept
tawar, bland, tasteless, ineffective, innocuous. **tawaran**, offer
tayub(an), a dance
tebal, thick. **menebalkan**, to thicken
tebang, menebang, to fell
tebu, sugar-cane
tedeng, screen. **tedeng aling-aling**, to hide, seek cover. **tanpa tedeng aling-aling**, openly, unashamedly, without pretence
teduh, quiet, calm, to stop (of rain)
tegang, tense, strained, keyed up. **ketegangan**, strain, tension
tegas, firm, decisive
teguk, meneguk(i), to swallow, gulp down
tegur, to criticise, to warn, to greet, address. **bertegur-teguran**, to call to e.o. **menegur**, to admonish, warn.
teh, tea
tehnik, technology
tekad, bertekad, to be determined, to make up o's mind
tekan, menekan, to press, supress, oppress. **tekanan**, pressure, emphasis, stress
teka-teki, puzzle, riddle
teko, teapot
teks, text
tekun, bertekun, to be diligent
telah already. **setelah**, after
telan, menelan, to swallow, consume, to gobble, gulp
tele, bertele-tele, to talk nonsense
telepon, telephone
televisi, television
telinga, ear
teliti, detailed, thorough
teluk, bay
telunjuk, index finger
telur, egg. **bertelur**, to lay eggs
teman, friend. **menemani**, to accompany
tembak, bertembak-tembakan, to shoot, fire at e.o. **tertembak**, to be shot. **tertembak mati**, to be shot dead
tempat, place, position. **tempat duduk**, seat. **tempat kediaman**, dwelling. **tempat pangkas rambut**, barber's shop, hairdressing salon. **tempat tidur**, bed. **tempat tujuan**, destination. **menempatkan**, to place, put. **setempat**, local
tempe, a kind of soybean cake
temperamen, bertemperamen keras, quick tempered, excitable
tempolong, spitoon
tempuh, menempuh, to take, to go through, to face s.t., endure
temu, bertemu (dengan), to meet. **ketemu dengan**, to meet. **mempertemukan**, to unite s.o. or s.t., to confront. **menemui**, to discover, find out, to visit, see, to meet. **menemukan**, to find out, discover, to come across. **penemu**, discoverer. **penemuan**, discovery. **pertemuan**, meeting, gathering
tenaga, power, energy, vitality. **tenaga kesanggupannya**, physical capability, strength
tenang, calm, quiet, unobstrusive
tengadah, to look up at, looking up. **menengadah**, to look up
tengah, middle, centre. **setengah**, a half. **setengah umur**, middle-aged
tenggara, south-east
tengkar, bertengkar, to quarrel, fight. **pertengkaran**, quarrel, fight

tenis, tennis
tentang, about, concerning. **bertentangan**, to be in conflict, to contradict e.o. **menentang**, to challenge, confront, oppose, to face, risk. **pertentangan**, quarrel, conflict
tentara, army, soldier
tentu, certainly, of course, without doubt, naturally. **tentunya**, without doubt, undoubtedly. **menentukan**, to determine, to fix, to dictate. **tertentu**, proper, specific, fixed
tenun, **tenun-menenun**, anything to do with weaving
tepas, **menepaskan**, to shake off, get rid of s.t.
tepat, definite. **bertepatan**, to coincide
tepi, side, edge. **bertepikan**, to have as an edge. **menepi**, to move aside, to the edge. **menepikan**, to place s.t. to one side, on the edge, to neglect, ignore = **mengetepikan**
tepuk, **bertepuk tangan**, to clap, applaud. **menepuk(-nepuk)**, to pat
terang, clear, bright, evident. **terang-benderang**, brightly lit. **keterangan**, information, explanation. **menerangi**, to illuminate. **menerangkan**, to explain, clarify. **penerangan**, lighting, explanation
terbang, to fly. **beterbangan**, to fly around
terbit, **menerbitkan**, to publish. **penerbitan**, publishing
teriak, **berteriak**, to shout, scream, call out. **berteriak-teriak**, to scream repeatedly, shout again and again. **teriakan**, scream, shout
terik, heat (of the sun)
terima, to accept, receive. **terima kasih**, thank you. **berterima kasih**, to be thankful, grateful. **menerima**, to accept, receive
terjemah, **menterjemahkan**, to translate. **terjemahan**, translation
terjun, to dive into, leap into, plunge. **berterjunan**, to dive, jump off, leap into
terlalu, too, excessive
termos, thermos
terpa, **menerpa**, to pounce on, jump on, to assail
tertawa, to laugh
terus, to continue, to keep on, straight on, continuously. **terus-menerus**, continuously. **terus terang**, frank. **berterusterang**, to be frank, frankly. **meneruskan**, to continue
tesis, thesis, dissertation
tetangga, neighbour. **bertetangga**, to be neighbours
tetap, firm, definite, certain, permanent, to remain, stay. **menetap**, to reside, live, to settle
tetapi, but = **tapi**
tetes, drop, drip
tiada, not, is not, are not
tiang, pole, post
tiap, each, every. **tiap-tiap**, each every, **setiap**, every
tiba, to arrive. **tiba-tiba**, suddenly
tidak, no, not = **tak**
tidur, to sleep. **penidur**, sleepy head. one who sleeps a lot. **tertidur**, to fall asleep, drop off to sleep
tiga, three
tik, **mentik**, to type
tikar, mat
tikus, mouse, rat
timbang, **mempertimbangkan**, to consider, weigh up, think about, to decide. **menimbang**, to weigh, evaluate, calculate
timbul, to appear, rise, emerge.

menimbulkan, to cause
timbun, timbunan, pile, heap
timpa, menimpa, to strike, fall on. **menimpakan**, to drop s.t. on s.o., to blame
timur, east
tindak, tindakan, act, action, measures
tinggal, to live, stay, remain. **ketinggalan**, to be left behind, missed out. **meninggal**, to die. **meninggalkan**, to leave s.t. behind. **peninggalan**, heirloom, relic, legacy, heritage, s.t. remaining. **sepeninggal**, during the absence of. **tertinggal**, left behind
tinggi, high, tall. **mempertinggi**, to heighten, to build up higher. **meninggikan**, to raise, heighten, to build up higher
tingkah, tingkah laku, behaviour
tingkat, floor, storey, level. **meningkat**, to rise, increase. **meningkatkan**, to raise s.t.
tipis, thin, **menipis**, to become thin, to weaken, lessen
tipu, menipu (diri) to deceive (o.s.), trick, cheat. **menipu hatinya**, to deceive, fool o.s. **penipu**, cheat, deceiver, impostor
tipus, typhus, typhoid
tiru, meniru, to imitate
titi, meniti, to walk along s.t. narrow (footbridge, pole, tightrope) **titian**, bridge
titik, a dot, drop. **menitik**, to drip
titip, menitipkan, to entrust s.o. or s.t. to s.o.'s care
tiup, bertiup, to blow (of the wind). **meniup**, to blow
toh, yet, even so
tohor, shallow
toko, shop
tokoh, figure, personality, celebrity, character
tolak, menolak, to push, refuse, reject
tolerir, mentolerir, to tolerate, stand for
tolong, to help, please. **tolong-menolong**, to help e.o. **bertolong-tolongan**, to help e.o. **menolong**, to help. **pertolongan**, help, assistance
tombak, spear
tong, bin. **tong sampah**, rubbish bin
tongkat, stick, walking stick, cane. **mempertongkat**, to use as a staff, as a walking stick
tonton, menonton, to watch, view, to be a spectator. **penonton**, spectator. **tontonan**, spectacle, performance
topang, prop, support. **menopang**, to support
topi, hat
torne, tour, circuit = **tourne**
tourne, to go on a tour (to inspect s.t.) = **torne**
trampil, ketrampilan, ability
transmigran, transmigrant
transmigrasi, transmigration
tua, old. **tua-bangka**, old and decrepit. **ketuaan**, too old
Tuan, Sir, Mr, you, your. **mempertuan**, to treat (s.o.) as a master
tuang, menuangkan, to pour out, to empty
tubuh, body
tuduh, menuduh, to accuse. **tuduhan**, accusation, charge
tudung, mempertudung, to use as a cover
tugas, duty, task
Tuhan, God. **Tuhan Yang Maha Esa**, Almighty God. **ketuhanan**, belief in God
tuju, to aim at, head for, to refer to. **bertujuan**, to intend, to have a goal or purpose, to have as a destination. **menuju**, to aim at, head for, to achieve, to refer to,

to, towards, in the direction of. **menujukan** to point s.t., to direct s.t. **menyetujui**, to agree with, to approve. **persetujuan**, agreement, support. **setuju**, to agree, to support.
tertuju kepada, to be fixed on, directed towards
tujuh, seven
tukang, artisan, workman. **tukang pangkas**, barber. **tukang pikul**, bearer, carrier. **tukang sayur**, vegetable seller
tukik, menukik, to focus, to peer intently
tulis, menulis, to write. **menuliskan**, to write down, to write with. **penulis**, writer. **tertulis**, written. **tulisan**, (piece of) writing
tumbuh, to grow. **tumbuh-tumbuhan**, plants, vegetation, flora
tumbuk, menumbuk, to pound, to crash into, collide, come up against
tumpah, menumpahkan, to shed, spill
tumpang, penumpang, passenger
tunakarya, without a job
tunawisma, homeless
tunai, menunaikan, to pay up, pay a bill, to fulfil, carry out
tunang, pertunangan, engagement, betrothal
tunduk, subordinated, subjugated, subjected to. **menundukkan**, to bow, conquer. **tertunduk**, crushed
tunggal, unique, single, sole, only
tunggu, menunggu, to wait. **menunggu-nunggu**, to hang about, wait around, to wait, hope for eagerly
tungku, fireplace (for cooking)
tungkup, tertungkup, lying upside down
tunjuk, menunjuk, to point, show, to appoint. **menunjukkan**, to show, point out. **pertunjukan**, performance, exhibition
tuntun, menuntun, to guide, lead
tuntut, tuntutan, demand
turun, to go down, descend, to get off or out of (a vehicle). **turun-naik**, to go up and down. **turun-temurun**, from generation to generation, hereditary. **keturunan**, descendant
turut, berturut-turut, in succession. **menurut**, to follow, according to. **menurutkan**, to follow, obey, to copy, imitate
tusuk, menusuk, to hurt, to prick
tutup, to close. **penutup**, lid, cover, shutter. **(sebagai) penutup**, (in) closing
tutur, menuturkan, to relate, narrate, tell of

U

uang, money. **uang pasangan**, stake (n). **uang sekolah**, school fees. **beruang**, to have money
uap, beruap, to steam, to form a haze, be hazy
ubah, difference. **perubahan**, change, alteration. **terubah(kan)** changeable
ubun-ubun, crown of the head
ucap, mengucapkan, to say, utter, express, bid, wish. **terucapkan**, able to be expressed, stated. **ucapan**, speech, saying, expression
udang, prawn, shrimp
udara, air, atmosphere, sky
ujian, examination (paper), test
ujung, end
ukir, mengukir, to carve, engrave
ukur, mengukur, to measure
ulama, Islamic religious teacher
ulang, ulangtahun, birthday. **berulang**, to repeat, recur.

mengulang, to repeat. **mengulangi**, to repeat s.t. **mengulang-ulang**, to repeat over and over. **ulangan**, revision, repetition

ular, snake, serpent

ulat, caterpillar, worm, grub

ulur, mengulurkan, to hand s.t., pass s.t., stretch, extend (of hand)

umat, member(s) of a religious community

umpan, bait

umum, public, common, usual, widespread, the public. **mengumumkan**, to announce, notify, to publish

umur, age. **berumur**, to be (so many) years old

undang, mengundang, to invite

ungkap, mengungkapkan, to express. **ungkapan**, phrase, expression

ungsi, mengungsi, to flee, evacuate. **pengungsi**, refugee

untuk, for, in order to. **memperuntukkan**, to intend, destin for, earmark for

untung, untunglah, fortunately. **beruntung**, to be fortunate, lucky. **menguntungkan**, to favour, benefit, favourable

upacara, ceremony

upah, wage(s)

urai, berurai, to scatter, disperse, to unfold. **mengurai**, to burst open, unfold. **uraian**, analysis, diagnosis, explanation

urat, vein

urus, berurusan, to have business with. **mengurus**, to organise, to take care of. **pengurus**, manager, management. **urusan**, matter, affair, arrangement, business

urut, urut-mengurut, to massage, stroke

usah, need (n), necessary

usaha, effort, exertion, striving. **berusaha**, to try, to make an effort, exert o.s. **mengusahakan**, to organise, to carry on, to make an effort, to cultivate. **pengusaha**, businessman, employer. **perusahaan**, business, firm, company. **usahawan**, businessman, employer, industrialist

usia, life, age, years, lifespan. **berusia**, to be (so many) years old

usul, proposal, suggestion

utama, main, principal. **terutama**, especially, particularly

utara, north

V

vitamin, vitamin

W

wabah, plague

wadah, container

wadul, basin, cauldron

wah! gosh! golly!

wajah, face, countenance

wajar, real, true, genuine

wajib, obligatory. **berwajib**, to be responsible. **kewajiban**, duty, obligation. **yang berwajib**, the authorities, officials

wakil, representative, deputy. **wakil presiden**, vice-president. **mewakili**, to represent

waktu, time, when, while. **sewaktu-waktu**, at any time

walau(pun), although

wanita, woman, female

waras, sane

warga, citizen. **warganegara**, citizen

waris, warisan, legacy

warna, colour. **be(r)warna**, to be coloured. **be(r)warna-warna**, to be multi-coloured, many hued

warta, news, **wartawan**, journalist, reporter, newspaper man. **wartawan foto**, press photographer. **wartawati**, female journalist
wasangka, suspicion
wawancara, interview. **berwawancara**, to interview, to hold an interview. **pewawancara**, interviewer
wayang, puppet show. **wayang kulit**, shadow play with leather puppets
wenang, berwenang, to have power
wilayah, area, district, region
windu, a cycle of 8 years in Javanese calendrical reckoning
wiski, whisky
wisma, building, home
wol, wool, woollen
wujud, mewujudkan, to create, to bring into being, to give a shape to

Y

ya, yes, well. . . = **yah**
yah, yes = **ya**
Yahudi, Jew, Jewish
yaitu, that is, i.e., viz.
yakin, sure, certain
yang, that, which
yayasan, foundation, institute

Z

zaman, age, era = **jaman**